

ROAD TO KINGDOM

– Oukoku e Tsuzuku Michi –

- Volume 6 -

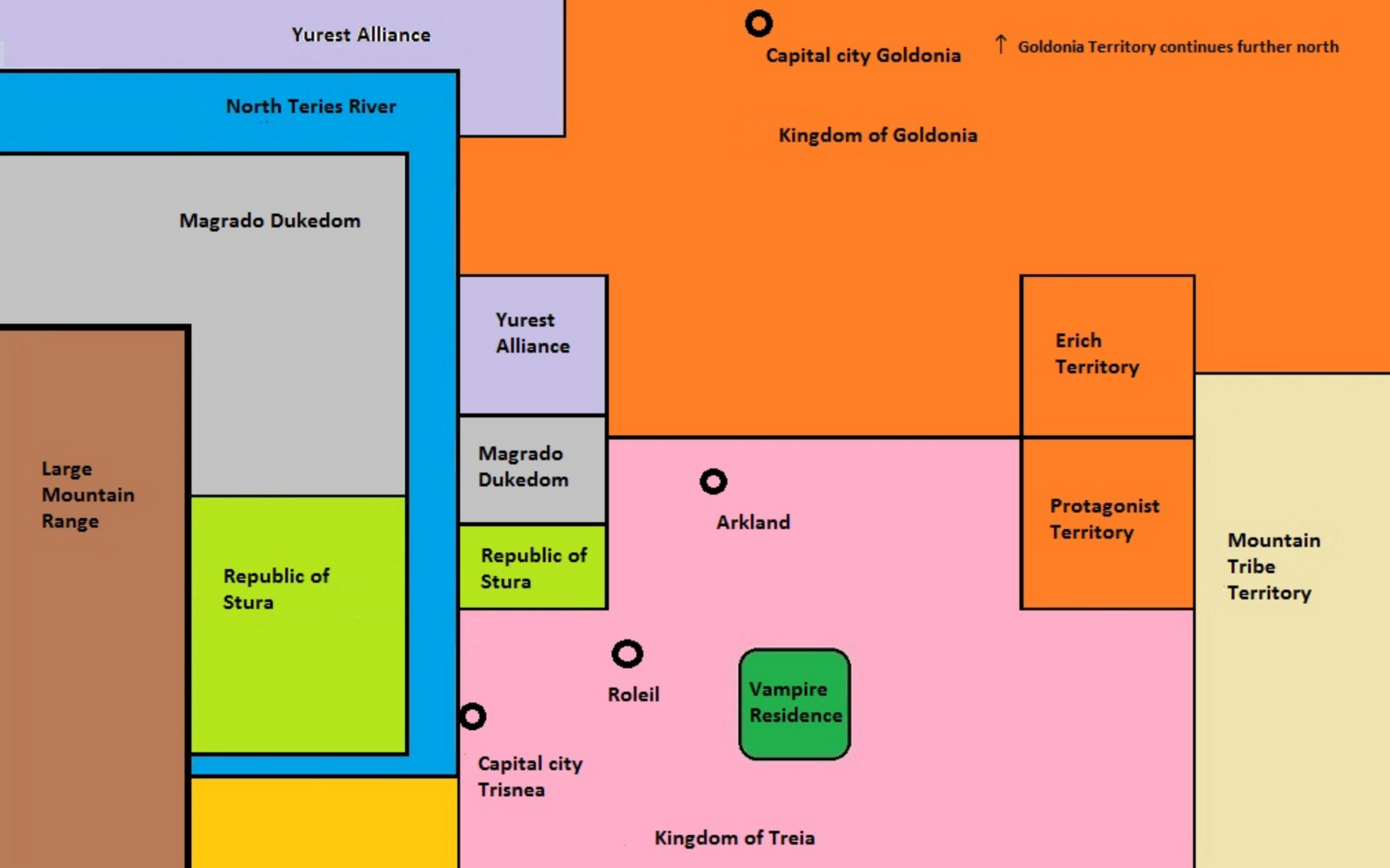
AUTHOR:

Ofuro Ashitsubo

ARTIST:

Hikage Eiji

[Translated by: Light Novels Translations]



CHAPTER 70

A CHAIN OF TROUBLES WITH WOMEN

-Aegir POV-

"Welcome back."

Melissa and Maria greeted me back with open arms. Right now, I have returned to my house in the capital. The reason is because of Melissa's letter. It took Schwartz two days to get from Rafen to the capital, when it would have taken other horses three to four days. Even though the war is over, there is still the issue with trading with the mountain people, so it's not like I can be gone for too long, but there is also an incident here to deal with, which can't be helped.

"Please, come this way."

I thought the two of them would greet me with more of a smile, but would they get mad if I said they haven't changed.

I pass through to a guest room where a rather large bed is placed. There, with a slightly tired face was Catherine and..... a sleeping baby with black hair.

"He was born five days ago. As I've written in the letter, the orphanage has too much dust and bugs, so this room has been used to give birth and for rest."

"I see, you did your best."

To be brief, Catherine seems to be a little bashful, hiding her face a little while stroking the baby.

"Thank you for letting me borrow the room... you actually didn't want to let me in the house, right?"

Catherine's tongue is sharp as usual. When I look at her this way, it makes her have such a childish face.

“I’m not such a demon that I would kick you out right after you’ve given birth. Take your time and rest.”

“Yeah. And also..... Nevermind.”

If Catherine is not going to say anything, then I don’t have anything to say either. She just gave birth to the child she was pregnant with, and was basically asking me ‘don’t you have anything to say?’

Melissa flared up. The three servants from the orphanage are behind Maria but their eyes are half-open and it seems they felt uncomfortable.

“Aegir-san! It’s your child right? Why are you not doing anything!?”

Melissa bellows unusually. I didn’t take care of him because I thought that if I took care of the child of another woman outside the family, you would get jealous for sure.

“Catherine-san, she collapsed while holding her stomach, you know? Even after helping her and after she woke up, she wouldn’t speak to anyone except Aegir-san! She said that if you weren’t here, she would have given birth on the streets!”

So she was trying to get me to notice by showing up at my doorstep here and there after her stomach started getting bigger. She didn’t say anything so I thought that she was trying to hide it.

“We finally forcefully dragged her back home and had her sleep in a bed though. Even now, she’s not telling us who the father is. Aegir-san, please ask her.”

Melissa is boiling with anger as she steps out of the way.

Even as I stood in front of the bed, Catherine was unbelievably more meek than her usual attitude. I prefer it better when she’s energetic like a beast during the times she’s getting fucked though.

“Catherine.”

“Yes... what is it?”

“Is this my kid?”

She looks down and her voice gets softer.

“No, it’s not.”

“Catherine-san!”

Melissa raised her voice loudly.

“I was embraced by a random man and got pregnant. I’m sorry, I’ve caused you trouble. When my body recovers, I’ll immediately-”

I kiss Catherine and hug her tightly.

“It’s my kid, right?”

The hand that was resisting me wrapped around my back, and her fingernails dug in a little.

“Yes, you’re right..... it’s your son. Even though I knew I wasn’t supposed to get pregnant, I didn’t have the heart to abort the child... even though I’m not supposed to, I gave birth to your child, although I know it’s bad to do so!”

From this point on, she was sobbing incoherently and I couldn’t understand a word of what she said. For a while, I hugged her in order to calm her down, and when her voice died down, I once again tried to talk to her. Before I knew it, we were the only ones left in this place.

“Leave the rest to me. I’ll do something about it, so don’t worry.”

“You won’t kill the baby?”

“Don’t worry.”

Everything will be over once the king finds out, but it’s not like I could say Catherine is alive in the first place. So in this case, one secret, two secrets – it’s the same thing.

“I’m so glad.....”

Catherine crumbles to the ground. She must have been worried sick about the treatment of her child. She is always a person who lives for the sake of her children. Even though she's so foul-mouthed, she's a good mother.

"My bad, you wanted me to notice, right?"

"That's right. I purposely came over every time and made my stomach stand out. If I could only tell you by saying it, then everybody would have found out."

Catherine wasn't using her usual foul mouth, but was blaming me in a pouting tone.

"I noticed it. Before you came and told me, I just thought that you wanted me to keep quiet about it."

She immediately hits my head.

"Baka¹... You're a woman's enemy."

Just like that, she jumped into my chest, and while burying her face, she started to talk and squirm around in my arms.

"Today has ended. The things of the past are no more."

I wanted to look at her face, but she remains buried in my chest and doesn't move.

"I've fallen... completely, even my heart. I even bore your child, so I don't know what I should do."

When she's mumbling like this against my chest, it feels ticklish. My lower half seems like it'll react to this, but as expected, I can't embrace her five days after giving birth.

"Here."

Catherine raises her face and hands me a small ring.

"What is this?"

It is such an awkward timing to be giving me a present and it's much too small. This would only fit on my pinky finger.

“It’s the ring that was given to me by my husband; it’s something I’ve hidden and is the only thing that reminds me of him. Sell it off... no, if possible, I want to crush it with a hammer or something.”

“Are you sure?”

“Yes, I don’t need it anymore. I am not that person’s widow but your... mistress. I’ve gone so far as to bear your child, so you can play² with me forever. Even so, I can feel happiness as a pitiful mistress.”

Catherine has bore my child, and her heart has fallen. The two of us sealed this contract with a sweet kiss and we agreed for the small ring to be forgotten.



“How did it go?”

When I exited the room, everyone was standing by in the corridor. Melissa asked me as their representative.

“Catherine became my woman. From now on the child... Antonio will be staying with her here in this house. Of course, so will the child in the orphanage.”

The son is named Antonio. It seems that Catherine decided it on the spot and I was the one who only approved it.

Everyone lets out a sigh of relief. Apparently, they all welcomed Catherine to stay. I actually wanted to take her to my territory, but as expected, I couldn’t bring a mother who just gave birth and a newly-born child on a journey with me. I’ll have them be taken care of in this house for awhile; Melissa is here so there should be nothing to worry about.

“I think it’s the correct decision... however”

In order to lecture me, Melissa took me to a separate room. It was there that the lecture of the correct way to treat a woman continued on endlessly.

“Pretending not to notice a woman’s lies is second-rate.”

I see.

“Even though you realized, she has noticed that you did, and on top of that she doesn’t care.”

Fumu fumu³, I see.

“Catherine-san has probably been seeking help from you all this time.”

That may have been the case.

“Realizing what a woman truly wants will make you a first-rate lady-killer.”

I understand quite well... hm? Something seems wrong here.

It feels like I’ve improved a little at handling women from Melissa’s lecture.



“Melissa! It’s intense.”

“Ahaha, how about here?”

“Sto-!!”

After the problem got resolved, right now I am watching as Maria and Melissa are entwining their bodies together. In the past, I had several women do this before, but this time I had a slightly different idea in mind. The girls are not using their hands or mouths to caress each other, but they are instead using a large dildo, inserting both ends into themselves and rubbing their waists against each other.

“But this is quite the large dildo isn’t it.”

“It’s a specially ordered item. But even so, it’s still one size smaller than Aegir-san’s thing.”

It was made with such an unbalanced size in order for Melissa and Maria to have fun from the beginning. Melissa’s end is much thicker and longer since that is what she

prefers. The tool made for the girls to enjoy is wet with the two women's juices and is emitting quite the erotic aura. To order this... Maria certainly couldn't do this so it was probably Melissa who did, but just imagining Maria trying to do so is getting me hard.

"Aahn-, go a little easier on mee!"

At first, both of them were moving their hips, but because of the difference in experience, gradually Melissa was the one who took advantage and is one-sidedly attacking Maria, who has fallen over onto the bed. Which reminds me, during the time when Maria was together with Carla in Roleil, it seems she also did this kind of thing. She may have latent abilities to mingle with girls.

Seeing how Melissa is thrusting into Maria, who is letting out sweet moans, I felt a hint of uneasiness, and felt that I needed to join in, so I climbed onto the bed. I pull the rival dildo out from both of their holes and let them taste the real thing.

But even so, it hasn't been that long since I left the capital, and yet this dildo looks like it's been used a lot.

"How much have you two been doing it?"

"Umm...ahaha"

"Eheh"

While the girls are being pinned down by me, they laugh with each other.

""We didn't do it yesterday though?""

In other words, they did it every day... Should I be happy that there are no signs of another man in the picture, or should I lament the fact that their love for women is growing.

From some strange sense of jealousy, the attacks get more violent as it turned into intercourse that was intense enough to make not only Maria, but Melissa as well, start foaming at the mouth. After I was finished with them, when they tried to put the dildo back inside, it felt quite loose in their holes, which have been thoroughly molded with the shape of my cock.

Well, that should be alright for now.



A few days later Rafen

“How was the cute little baby?”

“When will we get to meet the new woman?”

“Catherine, aah, that lewd woman.”

When I got back, the three wives immediately cross-examine me. I’m getting pretty sick of these kinds of carnage scenes.

“Catherine has just given birth after all, so she will be staying over there for a while. The son’s name is Antonio, and he’s doing well.”

The girls didn’t seem to be that surprised at all. They all knew about Melissa’s letters ahead of time and it wasn’t like Catherine was someone they didn’t know. It was different for Mel, who showed up suddenly along with her children. But one person – Nonna – was the only one who broke down completely.

“I... I’ve been beaten. To have a son born before me, ggh! How come I can’t get pregnant?”

I don’t know what would happen after I die, but speaking of inheritance, Catherine said she’s fine with being a mistress just as long as her children are looked after, so I don’t think there should be any problems.

“You can’t say those naive things! A woman who has a son is really formidable!”

Nonna is pleading to me with teary eyes, but she’s the only one who is of noble birth and the other girls don’t seem to particularly concerned. When I told them that Sebastian has finished preparing our meals, everyone dispersed.

“Aegir-sama! The other girls are getting pregnant one after the other so how come the seed isn’t reaching me?!”

Even if you say that, I intend to embrace you lots in addition to your own ambitions.

“I won’t let you sleep today! Please work hard until you have emptied yourself

completely!”

If you say that much, I can't back down as a man – after the 20th round, Nonna came down with a fever and ended up falling asleep.



“About the results of the investigation, we found a large iron mine within the mountain nation territory, but it hasn't really been touched and it's pretty out in the open too...”

“Regarding the trading, they have readily accepted and several dozen heads⁴ have been delivered already. If they want to utilize them, then the farmland has to further.....”

“About the training of the mountain nation, we had them rotated them in groups of 200. They were a bit awkward with our bows, but they can be called skilled bow cavalry who should still be of no match to anyone in the central plains. Next time.....”

Sleepy, way too sleepy. Because I tried so hard last night, most of what Adolph and Leopolt are saying to me is going in one ear and out the other. Fortunately, Celia is beside me taking notes, so I just have to hear it from her later.

Even so, Catherine's case was tackled by Melissa, and I got pestered for my seed by Nonna ever since I came back – recently, I've been getting worn out often from my female relationships. Celia tells me that it might be because of the grudge of a woman I slept with and abandoned, and that if this continues, my thing will get torn off. That's funny, because when I invite you to bed, you moan sweetly though.

“What's wrong chief? Pipi has been useful.”

I stroke Pipi in order to heal my heart. Celia is looking at me like she's going to cry so I pet her head too. Of course, she doesn't stop taking notes.

A relationship like this is also nice. I'll admire Pipi for a while without sleeping with her.

I got into a trance of stroking Pipi, and then that happened.

“Master, could I have a little of your time?”

Sebastian comes and whispers in my ear.

“A guest seems to have come.”

“Hm? Who is it?”

“Well, it seems that they want to speak with Viscount Hardlett directly.”

I won't make time for such a person like that, as I look at Sebastian with eyes of criticism. This is my territory, which is to say, I am the person with the highest authority. If the opposing party was to come so suddenly, they would have to be someone of noble status or someone with an invitation.

I don't mean to brag but if I were to meet everyone who wanted to see me, then the whole day would be filled just from meeting the guests. That is where the job of the butler comes in. But it's rare to see Sebastian do something like this.

“It's just that the visitor is a female with a ghastly appearance. I thought that she may be an acquaintance of yours.”

Even Sebastian is looking at me in that way. But if I think about it, there are a few girls that come to mind who look like they would say 'I got pregnant, help me'.

“.....I'll meet them.”

“Please come this way.”

If that is the case, then I'll grant them some living expenses and let them live in Rafen. I had that in mind when I went to greet the one at the door, but in front of my eyes, the largest class of woman trouble was waiting for me.

“Long time no see, Baronet Hardlett-sama. But I guess now you've been promoted to Viscount.”

“! You are.....”

When I heard it was a woman, I look to Celia who tagged along. She is mouthing the words to me, what a life saver!

“Yoguri... it’s been awhile.”

“Yeah, it really has, you’ve forgotten my name too it seems.”

She’s been listening carefully.

“You surprised me, coming so suddenly. What’s wrong?”

“.....”

It’s troubling if you just clam up like that; I haven’t laid my hands on her yet so she shouldn’t be pregnant. Celia puts her hand on her face and looks down, what a weirdo.

“You big liar!!”

Yoguri clasps her fingers into a fist and punches me. But, Celia who is beside me, shouldn’t stand for that, as she grabbed Yoguri’s arm and swept her feet, causing her to fall flat on the floor.

“You insolent being! I’ll kill you here with my bare hands!”

Celia pointed a knife, which I don’t know when she took out, at Yoguri’s neck.

“If you’re going to do it, do it quick! You changed your promise and you’re going to kill the woman who came to petition to you, you coward!”

This is bad, Celia’s expression has disappeared from her face. If I leave her alone, she’ll really stab her.

“Stop it, Celia.”

There’s no point in having her get stabbed at the entrance. Why don’t we talk it out in a different room.



“My village is in a predicament right now.”

Yoguri is mixed in words of condemnation as she prattled on intensely to me.

“Hardlett-sama has certainly promised the villagers who have risked their lives to fight for you as volunteer soldiers, have you not? You said that you would give us preferential treatment! But we have gotten nothing!”

It’s impossible to talk to a woman in this state. I try to remember what Melissa told me about what a girl truly wants, but right now, she probably just wants to vent out all her pent up frustrations to me. And the thing that she wants to tell me afterwards would have to be something that she has prepared considerably for.

“Tell me straight up. Are you going to help us? Or not?”

I let out a single sigh. Celia is appealing to me with her eyes to just chase her away, but I can’t just do that. In fact, when I listened to Yoguri’s story, she said the feudal lord in her village is also doing foolish things.

“I’ll help you. What do you want to do?”

This time it’s Celia’s turn to sigh.

“I want you to drive out that feudal lord.”

“That is impossible. Because he is also a noble of Goldonia.”

“Then, let all the villagers migrate to Hardlett-sama’s territory!”

That would not be impossible.

“If you come to my territory then I will accept you.”

“The feudal lord is wary of the citizens, so it would be pretty much impossible for the whole village to move out. That’s why...”

Aah, I have a bad feeling about this.

“Take everyone away to this territory.”

At times like this, my bad premonitions are usually correct.

“You want me to kidnap people?”

“You can’t?”

“I can’t just lead my army, push my way into my ally’s domain and take the people along with me.”

“Then we will go. If we become united as one army, we can breakthrough the feudal lord’s army! After, we can head towards Hardlett-sama’s territory.”

Then what you are doing is a starting a revolt. Even if you manage to defeat that feudal lord’s army, there is still quite a distance between her village and my territory. If the feudal lord’s army continues to pursue after you one after the other, you will without a doubt get wiped out. She must also understand that while telling me.

“I understand. I’ll do something about it. Why don’t you just stay somewhere in the town?”



I can’t just return to the village at this time. So I call Celia and Irijina.

“We can’t use the eastern army. So the private army... oh right, I’ll also ask Pipi whether she can send some people from the mountain tribe...”

“Wha-! Are you sane!?”

“That’s unreasonable! If you do something like that-!”

Celia and Irijina are both turning pale. That’s natural, since I’m planning to invade on the land of a Goldonian noble. But I won’t listen to any objections. A promise is a promise, and it is my disposition to fulfill anything that I promise. And besides, if I can’t keep a promise like this, how can I keep the promise to become king?

“Yoguri, I honestly forgot, but right now I will fulfill the agreement. Is that fine with you?”

“I’ll give you a break.”

She says that while taking her clothes off.

“Is this a farewell gift?”

“Nope, it’s the proof of our contract. I’m giving it to you now.”

Yoguri, who got naked in front of Celia and Irijina looks at me, as if asking me what she should do. The other two girls have their mouths hanging open.

When I try to lay her down sideways on the sofa, she resists me.

“Wait, I don’t mean for you to make love to me. That’s why you don’t have to be gentle. I just want you to take my virginity.”

“As for me, I want the both of us to get excited though.”

“No good, that will be after you have helped everyone.”

Seeing as it can’t be helped, I put my hands on the sofa. I can’t say my cock was ready for this sudden development so it wasn’t that energetic. But it might be just right to screw a woman who hasn’t been turned on yet. If I were to force my cock into her in its peak condition, then Yoguri’s genitals would break.

“Alright, break it.”

I place my cock against her and thrust my hips up. It wasn’t lubed up enough and her virgin hole is tight. Even so, I use my strength to push my hips up and put pressure on the hymen. Yoguri’s hymen is quite resistant and reflects her actual strict personality. But, in the face of the gradually expanding cock due to touching a woman, that resistance is nothing.

“Ngh-!”

“ts-!! Ow-!! Guuuu!!”

Yoguri shouted unintentionally due to feeling more pain than she expected, but she bit the sofa and it seems like she endured it.

“Uooh! I think I heard something.”

“Riip... That’s the sound of her hymen tearing isn’t it. How repulsive.”

When I noticed, Irijina and Celia are inspecting the place we are connected from a close distance.

“gh-! Don’t look!”

For the tough hymen, there is also a lot of bleeding, and while the blood was running down her thigh, Yoguri tries to threaten the two girls. I can’t have them fight so I move my hips in a way that makes her lose her composure. It seems that the pain is stronger than the pleasure as Yoguri is desperately trying to endure it while biting down on the sofa. There is a way for her to feel more pleasureable but it seems that she doesn’t want it.

The mating continued with just the sounds of moaning and flesh slapping against flesh. But regardless of what was on the mind, when a man is attacking a woman, he is bound to get turned on.

“Don’t... expand while you’re inside!”

Yoguri raises her voice, as the cock that penetrated her is continuing to get bigger since the time it entered.

“Aegir-sama is a terrible person. To push into a virgin and expand her on the inside... he must want to burst the inside of the hole. Poor thing, she will no longer function as a woman.”

Celia says it with the utmost hate towards Yoguri, but she can’t get rid of her cuteness no matter what. Also, the reason my cock is enlarging is also due to the fact that your hand is rubbing my body. But at this rate, she might actually get broken.

“It’s for your sake.”

I rub Yoguri's clit and attack her breasts. I also got Irijina to help as she rubbed my entire body.

"Sto-! I only said I would offer my virginity..."

Gradually, her insides started getting wet and it got easier to move. Nevertheless, it seems that the pain is strong as she also starts leaking more cold sweat. I should hurry and release then.

"Celia, Irijina, I'm counting on you."

While I'm thrusting into Yoguri, I had them service my balls and chest to speed up the buildup of pleasure. My seed instantly climbs up and I ejaculate.

"Uu-!"

"Eeh? Eeeeh!!! Wait aaaaa-!!!"

While Yoguri feels the pulsations of my dick, she goes wild. I forcibly pull the still ejaculating meat rod out of her and her entire body is bathed in semen.

"Wha-! Don't get it on me!..... no way, you came inside!!"

When I pulled out, quite a bit flowed into her, but what of it?

"What's wrong?"

"What do you mean what's wrong?! I said I was only offering you my virginity, but to inject your seed in me, how horrible!"

"Is that how it is?"

"Of course it is! Look how much... uuu, I can't scrape out that much."

"I see, so you didn't use any contraceptives?"

"If I could buy that kind of medicine, then I would have used that money to buy food!"

She eagerly applies the contraceptive given to her by Celia. Even so, the seed may have

reached her womb earlier so the possibility of her getting pregnant is not zero. The powerful drug also have secondary effects, and there aren't many girls who don't want to be pregnant that badly so we never used such strong medicine.

"You're unmarried right? Don't worry about it."

"I worry about it! I want to get married with a person I love and create a family! I don't want to be treated as a plaything!"

Yoguri stands up, as if saying she's had enough.

"I've offered my virginity as per the contract. On top of that, you shot your seed in me, so I will definitely get you to help everyone in the village!"

Well, what should I do?

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 150. Mountain Nation: xxxx

Assets: 5020 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak, Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Catherine, Antonio (son), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (mountain nation emissary), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 45, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 71

THE GOLDEN KNIGHT

-Aegir POV-

“Guh!!”

My meat rod pulses as my seed spurts inside the girl who was pinned below me. For the fifth or sixth time, the woman shows no reaction other than trembling slightly. After letting my voice out loudly after the third climax, she finally lost consciousness.

“Uuu,... fuu.”

Moving my waist a little bit at a time, my ejaculation continues. My balls are almost empty too. I pull my cock out from the woman who is lying face down. Her hole is still quite tight and my dick gets caught inside her, so unless I use a little force, I can't pull it out.

“Aau!”

Just the other day, Yoguri, who was still a virgin, was still tight for my thing. The absent-minded girl seems to have awakened from the stimulation and slight pain. While pouting, the girl glares at me as she furrows her eyebrows, watching a large amount of seed spilling out from inside her.

“You said you would fulfill the contract, but since then, you haven't done anything. You've just lusted for my body... are you really telling the truth? It might be too late already, but wouldn't it be a problem if we made a child?”

“Of course I'm not lying. But it's not like I can jump in there on a horse by myself and take everyone along with me, can I? I need to make preparations.”

I embrace Yoguri and caress her breasts. If you thoroughly do postcoital activity, even a cold woman will become gentle.

“Isn't the army outside the town? If you use that army, the feudal lord will be beaten

hands down!"

As if she was worried about her companions, Yoguri gets agitated and tries to stand up, although she groans and falls to her knees shortly after. It seems like there is still some lingering pain.

"Are you alright?"

"I'm fine, though this is your fault, since your thing was way too big! It's pretty much like a log... Anyway! The army has all been trained regularly. If you, the captain, gives them the order, they'll move out right?"

"Look here... you know that the feudal lord of your village is from Goldonia like me, right? I won't be able to deploy the kingdom's legitimate army against him."

"I don't know much about the difference in armies... then what are you going to do?"

I will use those who have sworn fealty to me, and not the king, and are unrelated with the kingdom.

"Aegir-sama, excuse me!... but I'm glad that it looks to be over. The mountain nation's leader has led his subordinates to the planned location and has arrived there safely."

Celia gives the report while glaring provokingly at Yoguri, who has my seed spilling out from her crotch.

I was waiting for this. Nevertheless, they are faster than expected; if I compare them to an express messenger which takes one day, it only required them two days to lead several hundred people there. It seems that it wasn't a lie when they said that as long as I gave the order, they could move out whenever I wanted.

"The mountain nation is... those barbarians?"

"Don't call them barbarians right in front of them. You're going to hurt Pipi's feelings. Well, that's how it is."

To these barbarians, they are not cognizant of the existence of Goldonia kingdom, much less King Alexandro. To them, everyone is recognized in the same way – whether they are from other countries or not – and they all get mixed into one big group: the

plains people. All they have is their loyalty towards me, and are pretty much the best private army anyone can have.

In addition, they are all mounted on horses and can march at lightning speed, making them the most suitable people for the current operation. By letting them use their own equipment, I can also make it look like an attack by genuine barbarians.

With a face that looks to be saying 'good grief', Leopolt appears behind Celia.

"The barbarians will attack and abduct the villagers, after that Lord Hardlett will suppress them when they are running back to our territory and then rescue the citizens. But when the barbarians abduct a large amount of citizens, 'we won't know where they come from either'. So, we will have to look after all of the citizens in our territory, without making any distinctions."

And that is what his plan is.

I thought he was against this kind of stupid fighting though.

"Of course, I'm against this. Not only does it not have any benefit, there are dangers to it. In the first place, if that woman's mouth is sealed, then this conversation would have been over."

Yoguri glares at Leopolt but, realizing that she's naked, hastily grabs the sheets to hide her body. However, Leopolt does not even give her fully exposed breasts a single glance. This guy is truly impotent or must really have a big preference for small girls.

"But you will do it either way, right? Then it would be better to think of a more preferable scenario, rather than just beating them up without thinking."

"Sorry for causing trouble for you."

"Please don't be so rash from now on."

"Pipi is going too! I was also told by the leader that I should always be by your side, so I can one day have your seed implanted in me."

I need to find out the name of the leader who taught my Pipi these meaningless things. I'm not going to return Pipi anymore.

“Then, I will also make preparations.”

“No, Celia and Irijina aren’t going.”

Even though it’ll make them cry, they still can’t go. Celia was infamous in my previous army. If there is even a single person among the troops of the other feudal lord that knows her, then they will immediately find out who they were instructed by. By the same reason, Irijina is also not participating.

“No way! Then the position of adjutant and daughter will be stolen by Pipi..... or not. But if Aegir-sama personally goes out as well, would it not be bad?”

She is certainly right, there are more people who know me and will make it even more of a commotion than for Celia or Irijina. And if they find the actual person responsible, then there will be no excuses. That’s why I thought of hiding my face.

“Even if you hide your face, they will realize when you ride Schwartz or swing around that big spear.”

Dual Crater is obviously out of the question, but so is the horse and spear, huh?... But the mountain nation won’t obey any other person. They have had training, but they still can’t do perform cooperative operations under any other superior officer besides me.

And for this invasion, they will be acting as barbarians as the premise when we work together, so everyone and everything around them will be considered as enemies. Still, I think it’s better if I use a weapon I’m comfortable with, as well as Schwartz. If the operation goes well, but I end up being caught, then it would be meaningless.

“No matter what?... not even if I somehow try not to stand out and make myself look the same as the mountain nation?”

“Not possible. If you wield that big spear amongst the mountain nation, who are using crude weapons, you will definitely stand out.”

“Don’t you have any good ideas for that?”

Leopolt sighed, seemingly giving in.

“In order to hide something, there are two methods. The first is to hide the tree among the forest... but in this case, the tree stands out too much and is impossible. The other way is to hide next to gold. Even if you are exposed to everyone, the gold will distract everyone’s attention and they may end up overlooking you.”

I don’t get it. What does he mean?

“In other words, we just have to prepare something so eccentric that they will not care about the horse or the large spear.”

“I don’t know where we could find something strange like that, and it’s not like we can prepare it now.”

If a woman like Yoguri came here by herself, then it must mean the situation is impending. If I were to tell her to wait one month, then she will certainly ‘sting’ me. Although, the one who should be piercing anyone is me.

“We have something like that, don’t we? It’s something we can prepare immediately and is extremely outstanding, and something that is literally gold.”

The thing appears in my mind, and everyone is definitely imagining the same thing. It was quite embarrassing, so the thing was carefully packed into the warehouse, where no one can see it. It is probably still glowing in the dim storage room, I hold my head while imagining such a thing.



“Everyone, advance! I will say it now, but if you find peddlers or soldiers on the way, ignore them. If you encounter a large squad, run away. You guys should be able to do it because of your mobility.”

The 200 mountain nation people are lined up, led by the four leaders. In reality, I could have prepared three times this amount, but if we make a mistake in our large army, it would be disadvantageous for us when it comes to running or hiding. According to Celia’s information, the one who has jurisdiction of the area which includes Yoguri’s village, is Baron Pedot, one of the new nobles close to Erich, although I don’t know his face or his name. It seems he was conferred his title by some nonsensical thing and his disposition has influenced his family name, but I don’t really know much about it.

His land is surrounded by the territory of other nobles, so there shouldn't be particularly many foreign enemies, and I've judged that he shouldn't have that large of an army. Rather, what is even more frightening is if we get discovered by the feudal lords in the area before we reach his territory, and get chased out by them. Therefore, we must act in secrecy, yet move as quickly as possible.

In addition, we can't let the townspeople know that we departed, so we will leave in the quiet of night. Recently, we have been calling the mountain nation periodically for training so it is not unnatural for them to be near the town, and even if 200 of them were to go missing, it would not be noticed that easily.

The ones next to me are just Pipi and Yoguri. I initially planned to leave her behind, but in order to get there quickly, we needed the girl who has familiarity with the land. Her riding abilities make me a little anxious, so I had her ride in one wagon, which was brought with us to carry villagers.

"Pipi, you stay close to me."

"Pipi can fight, you know? I'm better than most men with my bow and sword."

Her archery skills that were shown off during training surpasses those of Carla, not to mention it was while she was riding a horse, so what she's saying isn't a lie. However, after Carla got injured, I'm hesitating to have a woman stand in front. Only Irijina seems like she won't die, so I can be relieved of that.

"Nevertheless, Pipi should remain at my side. That would make things easier for me too."

"Then I'll do so. Pipi will obey the chief."

I stroke Pipi while we advance, and we finally reach the boundary line of my territory. From this point on, I don't know who we might encounter.

".....Bring the armor over here."

I was surprised at myself when I let out a voice without any ambition in it. That thing was brought out from the wagon..... and I put on Claudia's specially-made, shining, golden full plate armor. The mountain nation people in the vicinity cheered at the appearance of a brilliant knight. Certainly if I appear in this gaudy appearance, nobody

would care about the spear or the horse.

“It’s disgusting how well it fits.”

Claudia probably remembers my physique perfectly. It’s not like she took measurements, but the size is perfect for me. Even though we have been apart, she has take into account my growth; that’s how perfectly it fits.

“Moreover, it’s unexpectedly light and easy to move in.”

The highly sophisticated manufactured metallic armor is surprisingly light, and I can move relatively freely. And if there wasn’t any unnecessary decorations on this thing, it might have been something I could use on a frequent basis.

“Chief. It’s shiny and pretty.”

“Pff- what a splendid knight.”

Stop it you guys, I want to die.



A few days later, within Baron Pedot’s territory

It might have been a good decision for us to take a path away from the highway, since we haven’t really encountered the other feudal lords’ armies or soldiers. The mountain nation never really needed a road in the first place, so even in the wilderness, their marching speed doesn’t drop. However, as we approach the western area where the population is large, there’s a higher chance for us to get spotted by working farmers or hunters.

If they see a large group of barbarians appearing, they will run away in a hurry. I think they will tell their own feudal lord, but before that happens, they would have to return home, so I purposely let them go. Also, if word gets out that a witness is killed, then it would really look like it was a barbarian attack.

“In any case, it will be bad if we don’t hurry and achieve our objective.”

It would be troublesome if each feudal lord sent out suppression armies in our paths.

We will have to blow past them like the wind.

“Yoguri, is your village around here?”

“Yeah, if we pass that hill over there, you should be able to see our fields. But be careful, the feudal lord’s demesne is near our village and there are several dozen soldiers there.”

A demesne is land which is a part of the feudal lord’s assets. It isn’t land where the villagers work and tax is taken, but 100% of the harvest becomes his own income. The labor force in most cases will be the surrounding residents or purchased slaves. In Baron Pedot’s case, it seems to be the former.

“Even though our own fields are ruined and we can’t eat, we have to endlessly plough the feudal lord’s fields and it’s the worst feeling.”

“Anyway, we have 200 cavalry. Several dozen guards would be no problem for us. Even though he’s a noble I don’t know, having to kill one of my own hurts my heart, so I would be grateful if he runs away.”

While I was talking with Yoguri, we crossed the hill. I see, looking at it from above the hill, the village’s fields are spread out and there is a fence that divides the area. So, that is the demesne and the comparatively larger house in the center should be the feudal lord’s mansion?

“Chief, they’ve noticed.”

As Pipi spoke, a bell was rung in the village and in the demesne. If the villagers scatter around it would be annoying, so let’s hurry.

“Do as I said in the beginning. Take all the villagers and carry them on your horses, taking them to the place where the wagon is on standby. Absolutely don’t kill the villagers and if possible, don’t kill the soldiers either. Alright, go!!”

The mountain nation rode alongside each other on their horses as they charge into the village while shouting. Yep, no matter how anyone looks at it, they’re a group of barbarians.

Their appearance need to be kept like those of barbarians so they kept their original

crude equipment of leather armor, but their bows have been changed to powerful composite bows and their arrows are now well-balanced and can fly quite the distance. At first, they were perplexed at the fact that their weapons were changed, but after getting used to them, their genius abilities rejoiced. Since the time they have been repeatedly coming down from the mountain to conduct attacks, they should definitely have grown more powerful.

As the villagers doing farm work start to run away, they get captured one after the other. The villagers must have been surprised at our numbers and the sound of the horses' hooves as they didn't show any form of resistance, and our operation was progressing quite smoothly.

However, when a majority of the villagers, who were outside, were finished being transported, a problem occurred. The children and mothers who did not participate in doing farm work started to run away in all directions.

"Tch-! Why are they running?!"

Pipi lets out a voice of frustration. But that is natural when a foreign tribe is attacking and abducting the villagers one by one. Parents would obviously want to desperately take their children and run to a safe place.

"But that's troublesome. It would take some time for us to gather everyone."

If we take too long, the feudal lord's soldiers will start to gather too. Right now, there are only guards, who are probably ignoring the villagers because of the difference in numbers, and have closed themselves within the mansion while trembling. But if they accumulate numbers, they might do some unnecessary things.

"Chief, I will shoot their legs to stop them. Pipi will definitely hit them."

"Stop that."

I flick her forehead. No matter what you do, if you attack the villagers, they will go into a state of panic. The reason we are currently able to steadily progress in abducting them is because we have not been attacking them directly. If blood is spilled, the villagers will get frantic and start resisting you. If that happens, the operation will be delayed unnecessarily.

“Leave it to me.”

Before I realized, Yoguri has come to my side. I thought I had her in charge of calming down the villagers in the area where the wagon was though.

“My father has come a little while ago. I told him it was safe so it shouldn’t be a problem.”

A father who is using her daughter, how comical.

Yoguri took a deep breath and shouted in a loud voice that you couldn’t imagine originated from a woman.

“Everyone in the village! This is Yoguri! These people won’t harm you! Don’t worry and follow them!!”

It was a truly loud sound, as it echoed to all corners of the village, causing the feet of the running children and mothers to stop. Yoguri is essentially the leader of this village. The villagers looked over in this direction to confirm that it was Yoguri, stopped running and started to get on the mountain nation people’s horses by themselves.

“In one shot? What an incredible person.”

“Of course, they’re my companions who have been with me through thick and thin. They won’t do something like doubt me.”

When we form a new village, I’ll order Yoguri to be the village mayor. The current old man is clearly unfit for the job.

With the help of Yoguri’s persuasion, the villagers are cooperating and the operation is progressing steadily, and most of the villagers have been transported. However, feeling something out of place and the fact there are no sounds of fighting, the guards from the demesne are appearing one after the other.

“Tch, it would have been better if they holed up in there while trembling.”

When they saw that the villagers were spontaneously following us, they didn’t see it as them being kidnapped but as the villagers trying to escape. Foolishly, they aim their

bows at the escaping villagers.

“Watch out!”

Yoguri shouts, but it was too late. The arrow pierces through the back of an escaping mother who was holding her baby. The mother is still desperately trying to protect the baby and is shielding it with her body. But the guards continue to pull their bowstrings back.

“Samarsa! Noo!”

“Pipi, I’ll allow it. Do it.”

“Leave it to me. The target is big.”

Pipi draws her bow string taut and after a short moment of stillness, releases the arrow. The distance between them is around 100 m, with the fallen mother in the middle. The arrow that Pipi fired drew a parabola in the air, curved with the crosswind and pierced the throat of the soldier aiming at the mother.

“Amazing...”

Yoguri couldn’t help but let her voice out. How many people in the entire kingdom could accurately shoot from this distance with a crosswind blowing, moreover, the person who did it was a young girl, and not even a fully grown adult.

“Crosswinds are hard. If the target was a rabbit, then it would have missed.”

I stroke Pipi and immediately head over to the mother. Seeing as how I ordered her to fire her arrow, they must have seen it as permission to attack. The mountain nation fired their arrows all at once, and arrows rained on the heads of the guards. They were not as good as Pipi but they accurately aimed their arrows and the feudal lord’s guards fell over one by one, as if they got hit from point blank range. On the other hand, the arrows fired in resistance by the guards have mostly been blown away by the wind or fell in a totally different area.

Now that the guards have been eliminated, we can safely head over to the fallen mother’s side. I rush over and hug her close. She’s thin, but it seems she’s a decent woman who has some meat to her ass.

“...ngh! My child, please, my child...”

Fortunately, her baby isn't harmed, but the arrow is pierced quite deep into the mother's back. If we forcibly pull the arrow out, blood will spill and it may become a fatal wound.

“Hurry... take the child...”

“You're coming too.”

I pick up both the baby and the mother at the same time and carry them so that they could ride on Schwartz.

“You bastard! You're just some barbarian trash with some ridiculous outfit!”

A person who looks to be the captain of the guards comes galloping forward. His companions were falling one by one, yet he has the balls to come to us alone. And the one who is most aware about how ridiculous his own appearance is none other than myself.

If we stay like this we would get hit by arrows, so I cover my allies with a hand to protect them.

“You savage beings will regret making the glorious Goldonia kingdom into your enemy!”

“Someone who would shoot an arrow at the back of a running mother and child shouldn't say such big words.”

He didn't think that a barbarian would retort like that, so the man froze in place for a little bit, but soon his face filled with anger and turned red.

“You bastard! Name yourself! We'll settle this with a duel.”

I won't do something like telling you my name.

“I have no name. But I'll accept your challenge.”

“Tch- you don't even have a name? Here I come, golden warrior!”

The man who attached such a depressing name to me unsheathed his sword and came at me on his horse. It's not like he can't see my large spear, so why is he charging at me head on? He has courage, but if he's this foolhardy as well, it's no surprise that he couldn't become anything more than the leader of the demesne guards.

I swung down my spear, hit his body with my handle, and he falls to the ground. The man was brave, but he doesn't have the strength nor skill to be able to defend against my blow.

"Guaaa!"

The man lets out an agonizing scream. I didn't think I needed to kill a man who is just plain reckless, so I only used my handle to hit him, but Schwartz trampled over his lower half. As expected, he would suffer more if he wasn't finished off while he was being crushed from his waist down. At the very least, I won't let him feel much pain, so I gave him a single thrust through his heart before returning on my horse.

"I thought things would go more smoothly... but dealing so much damage to the guards and killing the captain, I absolutely can't let anyone find out."

If I am discovered, it will undoubtedly become treason. I have to take the women with me and escape.

"Chief is as strong as I thought! And moreover, you're the golden warrior."

"Samarsa, hurry and come!... Thank you, golden warrior."

Even my companions are trying to kill my heart.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 150. Mountain Nation: xxxx

Assets: 5020 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak, Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Catherine, Antonio (son), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (mountain nation emissary), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 45, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 72

ARMED UPRISING

–Aegir POV–

We finished loading all the citizens from Yoguri's village onto wagons and horses, and are now heading back home from Baron Pedot's territory. The villager abduction operation... it caused such a big commotion with the baron's soldiers, so if possible I want to avoid anymore fights with the other feudal lords. It would be nice if we can speedily head into my territory and not get suppressed.

"Is Samarsa okay?"

The strategy was rough around the edges, but the only one who got seriously injured was the mother called Samarsa.

"I'm not a doctor so I can't say much, but the arrow was pulled out very cleanly and the amount of blood loss isn't that big of a deal. Now, as long as the wound doesn't infect, I don't believe it will be life-threatening."

On top of not having good quality medicine, there are no absolute guarantees. I think she'd want to get saved for her child's sake too.

"Samarsa's husband died from illness, so that child is a memento. If we can do something about her..."

"In any case, it won't change anything even if we rush things. Other than having our horses gallop faster, there is nothing else we can do."

In order to make the wagon packed-full of villagers even a little lighter, Yoguri is riding with me in front. Unlike when we were coming, the wagon has now gotten heavier and is clearly dragging down the marching speed.

"It would have been better if more wagons were brought with us."

"Don't be ridiculous, if we gather the wagons inside the territory, then we can say

goodbye to our secret. I thought you were going to get on the back of the worst horse.”

“Hmm... So, what’s with the hand that’s slipping in my crotch then?”

Even though we wanted our horses to go faster, it was still only fast as the wagon could dash, but to Schwartz it was nothing more than a trot. Since there wasn’t any shaking, it didn’t hinder me from caressing Yoguri.

“You’re doing whatever you please, but I only said that I would offer you my virginity. I don’t remember saying that I would be your sex slave.”

Celia and Irijina aren’t around this time. Pipi is still small. It’s not like I can be too forceful with her.

“Also, you’re embracing me however you want, but I’m still unmarried, you know? You even went ‘dopyu dopyu’¹ and came inside..... If I get pregnant, are you going to make me your concubine or something?”

“If I make you a wife, it seems like I’ll get a whole lot of trouble.”

This time was unavoidable since it was a promise made since the Arkland war.

“Of course. Things like tax and labor, I’m going to appeal directly to you every time I get the chance.”

Adolph seems like he’s about to explode, so I’ll refrain from making her into a wife.

“That’s why... I wanted you to spare me from having your seed in me. I’ll let you do anything else you wanted.”

In that case, I’ll accept. I reach my hands to her breasts immediately, but got brushed away.

“I thought you said I could do as I wanted.”

“Samarsa is still in danger, so not until we get back. When she gets help, I’ll let you do it.”

The number of reasons for wanting the mother to live has increased. But Yoguri shouldn’t underestimate me. She just had her virginity taken so I’ve held back quite a

bit on all my attacks on her up till now. When we get back, I'll make sure to drive her crazy a whole lot.

"Pipi doesn't understand. Chief is such a great and strong man. Why would you refuse to have his seed?"

Pipi cuts into my conversation with Yoguri.

"Why? Well he won't even look after me, so wouldn't it be bad if we also made kids?"

"You have friends don't you? Are you saying they won't help a pregnant woman?"

"Well of course they will help, but if an unmarried woman holds a child, it makes me look like a loose woman!"

"Why? It's a joy to have a strong man plant his seed in you."

"Aaah, geez, then you two can just have sex with each other! "

"Of course we will. If the chief desires it, everyone will oblige. Even young kids and other wives."

"Wait a second, you do that stuff!?"

"No, I didn't. I just picked up several adult women."

The difference in culture between us and the mountain nation is vast. It seems like it will take quite a lot of time and effort in order to get both sides to work together.

We were travelling back home and encountered the other feudal lords' 100-man squads several times, but seeing our numbers, they thought twice about it and didn't come at us. We were able to arrive at my territory while shaking them off our tails.



"I'm glad you're safe, it seems that you got into a fight too."

Leopolt waits at the rendezvous point inside my territory and the mountain nation people switch straight away to training. I secretly sneak away from the area and throw

off my armor, then return to Rafen. The identity of the golden knight cannot be known by the villagers either; it's for the sake of keeping my heart at peace.

"There's kind of a badly injured person here. Go show her to the doctor."

"I understand. Then I'll have the injured person continue on the wagon. The other villagers will come this way."

The villagers start to gather, trying to figure out what's going on.

"I declare it to everyone. The barbarians that have kidnapped all of you have been swept away now!"

The villagers seem to have a blank look on their faces. But Leopolt continues further.

"Knowing this, if you want to go back to where you were before, I will release you immediately. However, if you all... are unsure of where you may have come from, I will allow you to stay and live here on this land."

I was watching the situation from afar but it doesn't seem there are any people who chose to go back to where they came from. With this, I have fulfilled my promise. All that's left is for Samarsa to get saved and there will be no bitter aftertaste.



-Third person/Treia Kingdom POV-

Former Arkland Territory Treia Kingdom Domain

"Hm. So this year's harvest amounts to this..."

"Yes... at any rate, this is the first harvest after the war ended and the fields have been ruined."

The two men conversed while overlooking the harvest of the wheat fields. One of them speaks arrogantly, while the other acts subservient with his waist bent forward in a slight bow.

"Harvest of this degree is not good enough. I will set the tax using last year's harvest

as the standard.”

“Y-you can’t! To base it on the state before the war, that’s too irrational!”

The arrogant man glares at the servile man.

“Don’t be so rude! Even if you don’t have wheat, you are growing the vile millet and vegetables, aren’t you? It can probably be rationed for a year’s time.”

“By your instructions to prioritize the wheat fields, even if it’s good now, the winter reserves will...”

“Oh, shut up! Anyways, that’s how it’s going to be. You just have to convince them afterwards!”

The arrogant man leaves, the servile man... the mayor of this village, attracts villagers around him. There was no attempt to hide the conversation and the villagers probably heard what has been said; their faces are dark.

“Mayor... those guys, they’re telling us to die.”

“It’s no good anymore, we will really starve to death.”

Everyone is wrapped in despair, but a single man cuts in sharply with his words.

“...Let’s head east. You’ve heard about those rumors, haven’t you? We’re going to run to Viscount Hardlett’s territory.”

Everyone knew about the rumors. Within the darkness, people naturally seek a bright hope. There is no tax, wages are paid for labor, and the migration of an entire village is allowed.

There are few people who will believe everything they hear, but even so it is a fact that it would be easier to live there than here. Not even thinking about abandoning the land that they’ve lived on for generations, they just looked on in envy like kids while muttering ‘that seems nice’ to themselves. But now, they have no hope otherwise.

“But recently, there have been many people from other villages who have escaped and the feudal lord’s soldiers are patrolling. I heard that if you get caught, you’ll work as a

slave on their demesne until you die.”

“Isn’t it the same now?! What’s the difference from that and starving to death?”

The mayor tries to control the villagers and speaks.

“Let’s go together... if we go one or two at a time, we might become prey to bandits, and easily found in the same manner by the feudal lord’s soldiers. If everyone in the village goes, then we will surely make it!”

Everyone remained silent for a short moment at the mayor’s voice. If everyone in the village stood up, then the feudal lord will also resist. This isn’t an escape attempt, but something closer to a rebellion.

“Then, let’s invite the guys from the neighboring villages too! They are also being ruled by the same feudal lord and their situation should be same.”

“Let’s call back the young migrant workers who left! They have all served in the army in the first place. They will certainly be reliable in fights!”

“There’s a spear brought back from the war hidden in the shed in Landon’s house! It’s much better compared to a hoe or a sickle!”

The villagers are offering their opinions one after the other. The cause which urged them into such extreme action is not solely due to the ruthless behavior of the feudal lord.

During the Arkland War, if there was no precedent of people having conducted an armed rebellion, then they may have been too frightened to do something like going against the feudal lord. Or, if there were no places which changed the way they were governed, then they may have accepted their current situation and gave up.

But it wasn’t like that. They have past experience of using force to rebel against the kingdom and there are young people who have gotten used to battle from serving in the army. There is also a place to live where the heavy tax isn’t crushing the people – in other words, they have hope. It didn’t take much time for them to gather the people in the vicinity, grab weapons and raise a battlecry.

Two or three of the poor villages, which hasn’t even seen 100 people, started their

forced escape scene in collaboration with the farmers. That rumor spread in a flash to the surrounding villages. Under the high degree of government pressure of the Treia kingdom lord's rule, those villages which had serious cases of famine and poverty were being abandoned one after the other.

Instead of trying to hide and escape like rats, they turned the tables on the bandits that tried to hunt them and even defeated the net that the feudal lord set up. With such a large number prepared, there are some among them who are not aiming to escape, but chose to attack the feudal lord instead.

It hasn't even been a year since the last war, but inside the territory of the former Arkland, at least within the Treia kingdom, the sounds of crumbling can be heard.



-Aegir POV-

"Something serious is going on!"

Some time has passed since the legendary stories of the golden knight – the stain of my life – and when I was finally able to kick out the memory from my heart, Adolph ran into my private room with a distorted expression. I was sitting on the sofa with Mel and Carla bent over at my feet, crawling their tongues on my member from the left and right.

"Hey, what are you doing?!"

"Please be a little more considerate."

The both of them cursed Adolph as they stopped moving their tongues and returned my thing back into my pants. They seemed to struggle in doing so as it was still erect. Adolph looked backwards with an uncomfortable face. He's still immature, since Leopolt would have started to mention his request with his usual expressionless face.

"So, what's so serious?"

"Ahem. To our west, within the area that Treia kingdom occupies, there seem to be frequent occurrences of citizens rebelling."

“Really? So what?”

Honestly, I’m not really interested. If it’s something related to the kingdom of Treia then it’s not like the king of Goldonia would give me any orders, so it’ll be fine if we just leave it alone.

“Well, we can’t do that. Because one of the reasons for their uprising is that they have started to move to the eastern Goldonian area, our territory.”

“? I don’t know what that means.”

“In other words, they want to escape to our territory. But they can’t run because the feudal lord’s soldiers are there. So they formed a faction in order to defeat the soldiers.”

“Well that’s a splendid escape scene. When they enter my territory, have them disarm themselves. If they won’t listen, they will just be insurgents. We can just wipe them all out.”

“Fortunately, not a soul in our territory is looking to cause problems at the moment... But things are not that simple. Today, there were also denominations of 50 to 100 people who came. This is no longer on the scale of refugees.”

The territory only had about 2000 people in the first place, so having several hundred people flowing in all at once like an avalanche will cause various problems.

“Will we run out of food?”

But Adolph denies it.

“No, I have finished speaking with the merchants in the capital regarding that. We have already stocked up a large amount for the year at a price lower than market price. You do not need to worry too much about the friction with the existing residents either. We have lots of uninhabited land, and they were originally residents of the same country in the first place and just crossed the border on their own, so there shouldn’t be any serious confrontations.”

“When I listen to what you’re saying, it doesn’t seem like there are any problems, but say what you are worried about.”

Carla and Mel, who are waiting on standby in the corner of the room, are getting irritated. Their service was at the final stage and they were getting ready to get into bed.

“With this many residents, it will create the same problem as last time – management. The feudal lords and Treian royal family should have an idea of where they are headed. They will probably be looking to protest and block off the borders from their side or perhaps through the Goldonian royal family.”

I am more concerned about getting exposed by Baron Pedot and them coming to beat me up... The guys from Treia won't say or do anything other than protest and put up border security. As expected, they won't say something like 'your place has too low tax, so increase it, and don't give out wages for labor'.

“But the outflow of citizens is their fault and has nothing to do with us. The immigrants are basically the same as slaves who have thrown away their status. There's nothing wrong with giving them land again.”

The farmers who abandoned their land will be treated as vagrants, who have no social standing. I can just say that these vagrants just came into my territory on my own, gathered together and made a new village, and they can't do anything but complain. Then it will definitely turn into a fight against them.

“Also, most of the western side of my territory is bordering with Treia. Many soldiers will be needed to watch over all of it. Why do I have to do that? There is no reason for me to do so.”

Adolph seems to have the same opinion and slowly nods.

“That is correct. That's why we have to bear in mind that this incident may be brought up in the talks with the Treia side and the Kingdom. Afterwards, we may need a countermeasure for our territory for after the revolt. I believe that falls under Leopoldo's expertise.”

The roles are properly divided up – Adolph does the domestic stuff, Leopold deals with the military, and I play with the women. Celia is trying to get involved in both the domestic affairs and the military affairs, but it seems she is still quite inexperienced, gets lost in the conversation and cries her eyes out.

“That’s true.... But this could have been brought up in the future when we have a meeting, did you really need to burst into my private room for this?”

It’s not like things were going on in my territory at the moment. It wasn’t even urgent news.

“If you wanted to see us naked then it would have been better to wait a little longer.”

“Maybe he wanted to join in if there was a chance. How naughty.”

“That’s not it!... I am from the rural area of Arkland. We might have to treat the rebellion over there more seriously than necessary.”

Adolph tells me that I should be careful from now on, as he lowers his head. The place becomes slightly darker.

“Then I’ll forgive you. Then let’s continue, embrace me~”

Carla instantly gets naked. Of course, she is in plain sight for Adolph to see everything.

“-! Excuse me.”

Adolph hurriedly leaves the room.

“Pfft-, the way he hurried out, maybe he’s a virgin?”

Carla cackles happily. But I can’t forgive her for showing her naked body to a man other than myself. She still isn’t quite aware of the fact that she has become my wife now. Every corner of Carla’s body belongs to me. Before escalating things, let’s stab her with something... thicker than a nail.

“Eh? You’re doing it already? I’ll get mad... just wait a minute!?! Not the ass!”

Mel smiles faintly as she holds Carla face down. I put my cock, still erect from the half-baked service which was interrupted, near Carla’s backdoor. I hold down Carla’s struggling hips and gently penetrate her.

“Wah-, it’s tight, too tight! I said you’re too big!”

She got torn greatly during the time I punished her in the past, but this time Mel is taking care and has dripped lots of saliva on the part where we are connected. Using her saliva as lubricant, Carla's hole did not tear and she was able to swallow me all the way up to the root.

"Aaaaoooooh... my ass, feels weird."

Carla has a fairly plump body, but she isn't able to take me so deep from the front. The only ones able to do so are Melissa, and Irijina, who needs me to forcefully screw myself in and is barely able to fit me. However, if it is the bottomless and deep ass hole, I can put it all the way inside.

"Uwaah... It's bulging so much, and it looks like it might tear after just a little bit more."

Mel rubs Carla's ass with great curiosity. I pay it no mind and continue to thrust, occasionally squeezing Carla's breasts.

"Smother me more! I want your entire body to cling to me."

Besides Carla, the other women also love it when we stick to each other while having sex. It might have felt lonely just having my cock touch her as I'm penetrating her ass from behind. When I cover her, Carla relaxes slightly and allows herself to be buried into the bed.

She is completely feeling the pleasure, and it's no longer punishment for her, but that can't be helped. Because of the service from earlier, I don't have much room to relax either. If I let it out inside her ass, it seems that it'll be a pain to clean up after, so let's have that be her punishment instead.

"I'm cumming in your ass. Raise it up more!"

I slap the ass which Carla pushes up and I stick to her back. After moving for a bit, I've gotten enough service and reach my limit.

"Guh, Carla!!"

Lying face down with just her ass raised, I embraced Carla from behind and ejaculate.

“Uuuu, Aegir is expanding..... aah, it’s coming out!! What an amazing amount, now my insides will get expanded.”

“I can hear it from here.”

Mel says that she could hear the sounds of ejaculation several times from where we are joined together. Both Carla and I moved slowly as we collapsed on the bed.

“The back of my stomach feels so hot. You released a ton, didn’t you?”

“Aah, I feel lighter.”

“Don’t just pull it out right away. I haven’t made preparations or anything yet so it might get messy.”

Mel blindfolds me and pulls me out of Carla, and continues to wipe me off with what felt like a wet towel. Whenever I used the asshole suddenly, it was an agreement between me and the girls that they wouldn’t let me look when they cleaned up the aftermath.

“Uuu, putting it in Carla’s ass first makes it tough for me.”

I feel sorry for making Mel do something unsavory.

“Then, let’s go take a bath together. I’ll be affectionate with you there.”

“I’ll go too once my butt gets cleaned... seems like it’ll take a while though. Your juices sprayed deep and all over the placeee~ aaah don’t listen to the sound!”

Leaving her there without listening to anything is kindness.



“Please have mercy on me.”

Mel got naked and sat down on the stool in the bathroom, lowering her head in between my legs and washing my member clean. Mel knows quite well how to get dominated and the method of how to get a man in the mood to do so. While looking up at me from below, she repeatedly gives the tip of my dick light kisses, waiting for

me to pounce on her.

I grab her shoulder and push her over. She falls without any resistance and welcomes me in between her legs and to her crotch. Mel is already putting her hand behind my head, wrapping her legs around my waist and slightly pushing out her own hips.

“I’m going straight to the back. Tell me if it hurts.”

“You are welcome to do it anytime, ah... Oooooo...”

I push in all the way to the deepest part and bury myself tightly against the mouth of her womb without hesitation. Mel is usually quite refined, but when I penetrate her with my cock and when she climaxes, she moans and screams like a beast. That gap increases my arousal and causes me to slam into her more intensely than usual.

“Aau, kuuh, aah, so big. How wonderful! It feels good, please thrust deeper into me!”

I thrust into Mel roughly and stuff my mouth with her nipples, sucking hard. She isn’t nursing Sue anymore, but it seems that when I suck on her while we’re having sex, she will still squirt breast milk out.

“Geez! You’re sucking my nipples again? It’s because Aegir-san doesn’t stop sucking that it won’t stop coming out.”

“It’s fine if it doesn’t stop, if you want, I can impregnate you with one more.”

My hips thrust stronger, and the sounds of our flesh slapping echo in the bathroom. Mel is gently rubbing my ass but she’s saying that she hates it. She knows that a woman that shows resistance to a fired up man will only build up his arousal.

I thrust into her despite her words of refusal and suck on the breasts of this woman gasping for air; the scene of perversion brings me closer to my limit. Mel is my concubine, and completely my woman. I’m pinning my own woman down and pouring my seed into her, and there is absolutely no resistance at all.

“I’m cumming, get pregnant!”

“Yes! Give me your thick seed! I’m also... at my limit! Uuuu!!”

I groan and slam my hips hard into Mel as her legs that were wrapped around my waist relaxes and stretches out. Like so, I can have my cock enter deeper into her, and I can pour all my seed into with all my might. My ejaculation starts and the both of us let out a long and loud moan. Mel rocks her hips gently while I'm still cumming so that I could cum easier as she accepts my semen. It must have been worthwhile as I released a large amount in Mel's womb – way more than I released when I came in Carla's ass.

“As usual, such a tremendous amount. For your seed to inflate my womb...”

After my long ejaculation finished, I was about to pull out, but Mel once again wraps her legs around my waist and prevents me from doing so.

“Please stay like this for a little longer. Let's stay connected until Carla-san comes.”

As Mel said that, she opens her mouth slightly and sticks her tongue out. That's right, Mel also loves kisses. I didn't do it when I was thrusting in her. As a sort of atonement, I give her a hot kiss, which eventually gets me hard, so I continue to have sex with her without pulling out.

The first thing Carla sees after she has finally finished cleaning up and was able to come over was me pulling out of Mel, who finally lost her strength, and a humongous puddle of semen on the bathroom stone floor which flowed out of Mel.

Without anything particular to do, my days filled with lust continued, and eventually, the thing that we expected to come, came.



“My name is Madolan! I have come representing Count Eskola of the Treia Kingdom! I apologize for the sudden visit, but I have an urgent matter and I wish for an audience with Lord Hardlett.”

In front of my mansion, several knights on horseback were calling out. Adolph, Leopolt and I instantly knew what they came to say.

“Something annoying came.”

“In fact, you can say they are late.”

I'm busy petting Celia's head while she's studying.

"I'm pretending to have a chronic sickness. You two deal with it."

I try to dismiss them and have them take Celia along, but not only the two of them, even Celia stopped me.

"If they don't directly speak with Lord Hardlett, they won't be convinced. If they stay too long, things might get more troublesome."

"I concur. Depending on the circumstances, we might require a prompt decision as well."

"I'll go with you for the discussion too."

It won't end at this rate, I'll just go and say something random.

"Nice to meet you. I am Madolan and I have been granted the honor of being a knight of the Treia Kingdom. Today, I have come as the proxy for my lord, Count Severi Eskola."

"Thanks for coming all this way. I'm Hardlett. I will hear your request."

Conversations with nobles of other countries are all sorts of annoying and takes a hell of a lot of time, but I omit everything. That guy called Madolan seems to be a little taken aback, but from what I can tell, he looks to be one of those military types of knights who doesn't require those fancy polite words and wants to quickly get to the main issue.

"Just the other day, a portion of farmers from our territory has raised a rebellion."

Leopolt's face twitches slightly. For a noble, something like having a rebellion occur in their own territory is a disgrace, and even if the whole society knows about it, it's not something that you normally talk about. That must be how far at wit's end he must be.

"Well, that's serious."

Ultimately, I remain expressionless, and turn to the wind with no interest in anything. Although in reality, I am not interested at all either.

"It's embarrassing for me to say it here but... Getting to the main issue, the insubordinate farmers seem to be escaping and are estimated to be headed to your territory."

"Well, that's quite problematic."

"Yes, they are armed as well so there's a chance that they will be bothering Lord Hardlett. When that happens, I request that you place security at your borders."

It's exactly what Adolph said.

"I appreciate your concern, but it's not possible to heed your advice."

"...May I ask the reason?"

"Needless to say, your homeland is to the south of my territory and the territory occupied by your country is to the west of my territory, and thus I am surrounded on all those sides by your country. There's no way that I can place guards to cover all that area."

"Of course, I am not telling you to do it for all areas. If it's possible for you to capture a portion of them, it may serve as a threat to the rest."

Their aim is not to capture everyone, but to crush the rumors. Since my land is being praised as the ideal land through the rumors, if the soldiers on my territory start capturing people, their hope will be crushed. Once the farmers lose hope, they will quietly accept their fates and obey them. I can see their line of thought, but I don't have an obligation to follow it.

"On top of my territory being large, my population is limited, and the highways are not even maintained. Although it is my territory, besides the main town and villages, I don't have the reserve capacity to spare for guards."

"I have seen a large army on the outskirts of this town in the garrison. You also have a large amount of cavalry, do you not?"

"That is preparation for the barbarians. They frequently come down from the mountains to our east. If I move them, I won't be able to respond to their attacks when

the time comes. Just the other day, the barbarians invaded our country's Baron Lorey's territory, and I have just subjugated them. Also, there hasn't been any damage in my territory in the first place caused by those rebelling farmers or whatever."

Leopolt immediately corrects me, informing them that it's Baron Pedot.

Quite some time has passed already, and I'm pretty sure he has registered what I have said, but Madolan stays silent. To them, foreign tribes are also a serious threat. Rather than the small-scale group of armed farmers, I have a legitimate reason to prepare for the other threat instead. The mountain tribe already obeys me and the one who attacked Baron Pedot was me, but he doesn't need to know that. The kingdom of Goldonia wasn't notified about my complete control over the situation either.

"...there is information that you hired the immigrants from other territories as manpower in your own territory, moreover you have given them land and helped them create villages."

Madolan looks at me with a harsh judgemental look in his eyes, but I give him a grin in return.

"If you ignore the vagrants, beggars and those sorts of people, the public order will be disrupted. With that said, I don't have the luxury to just give them food. Fortunately for me, I have tons of land, so I'm just letting them do farm work to earn their meals. In the first place, I have no clue whether they were previously farmers or slaves or something else."

"I heard that Lord Hardlett imposes an abnormally low tax, you compensate the people who do not have land with labor and things like that... don't you know that you are attracting the citizens from other territories to come?"

"Well, I have a military background and don't know much about the management of territory. I'm not interested in it either so I hand it off to my domestic affairs official. But does the tax and labor in my territory have anything to do with your country?"

A dangerous atmosphere is in the air, but neither Madolan nor I gives in. Only the maid, who came bringing some tea, is dripping cold sweat and panicking. Her breasts are big... maybe I'll invite her over tonight.

"If that's all you wanted to say, then there is no need to talk any further. I won't pay

attention to what your soldiers are doing in your territory and I'm not going to pay attention to the rebelling farmers either."

But don't talk about my territory, since I'll handle that on my own. I glare at him with those intentions embedded in my eyes.

"It's unfortunate, Viscount. I have already told our royalty and the Goldonian royalty should also have been informed about the situation."

This threat should be their last trump card. But I have a cushion by the name of Erich.

"Then I will think about it when the king brings it up."

After facing downwards and mumbling something, he gave a single order to his subordinates and they left on their horses. Things were dealt with more simply than I thought.

"What an upstart and uncivilized person-"

"Seems so. Did you get into a fight again?"

Nonna was waiting for me after I came out of the reception room where we were holding our conversation. I wonder if she heard my mumbling, I better not badmouth.

"Well, I guess so. They're probably cursing at me and heading to their great Count right about now."

Nonna sighed.

"It won't be good if you act so belligerent to nobles."

"I don't mind. He probably doesn't have the courage to come fight me seriously anyway."

Adolph and Leopolt were about to go back to their usual duties but I called them back, and speak after rubbing Celia's butt.

"Leopolt, finish up the eastern army's training and have them rest. Irijina... oh, she's not here, well she'll gather all the private army troops. I feel sorry for Pipi but I need

her to run to the mountains to get the leaders. It won't be 200 this time, I'll provide the food, so I need them to round up everyone who can fight, except children, and bring them here!"

Not only Nonna, everyone lets out their voice without thinking. I can't blame them; this is complete mobilization.

"Adolph, it's just as you heard. There will be close to 1000 mountain nation so there will be an estimated 3500 military strength... let's see, I will need you to gather one month's food supply."

"...What on earth are you planning to do?"

I wanted to make a serious face, but I unintentionally smiled a little.

"It's not based on logic or theory but intuition, and I can smell a war is on its way."



After that, the situation gradually starts to move. Since the kingdom of Treia could not get my cooperation, they must have thought that the regional feudal lords were uncontrollable, so they invested in the royal army. They guarded the borders strictly and the group of farmers that were heading to my territory became splatters of blood one by one.

But with this treatment, it further expanded the resentment of the group of farmers extensively, blowing up in scale to the several thousands, and after they broke through the royal army by force, they started to head east in a straight line.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 300. Mountain Nation: xxxx

Assets: 4500 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak, Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Catherine, Antonio (son), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (mountain nation emissary), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 45, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 73

TREIA CONFLICT ①

HILL OF GRIEF

–Aegir POV–

“It seems that several thousand Treia kingdom troops have been deployed near the border. The small groups of farmers have been crushed entirely.”

Adolph has a pensive look on his face, while Leopolt remains expressionless, but the fact doesn't change. The kingdom of Treia is also slaughtering the escaping farmers to act as a deterrent for others.

“Now we're doing the opposite of what we told Madolan not to do. Aren't we talking about what's going on in his country?”

“Also, I am having the camouflaged light cavalry cross the border to perform reconnaissance and collect detailed information.”

As expected, Leopolt is shrewd. On the off chance that they get captured, he will probably just deny that he knows anything.

“Make sure you do it moderately, okay? So, did you find out anything beyond what the rumors told us?”

Adolph's information mainly comes from talking to peddlers and the people, analysing and then compiling it together. It is surprisingly accurate, but he doesn't know much regarding the army.

“Their numbers are around 5000, they have a balanced formation of cavalry and archers. It is the kingdom's army without a doubt.”

“So he deployed 5000 of the kingdom's troops? Did he not think that he would clash with me if he wasn't careful?”

“Well, that's because Lord Hardlett ended the conversation so belligerently... and you

also harassed him too.”

These guys have such small assholes. ¹

“Anything else?”

“Yes, up until now, the troops have been spread wide and thin, laying in wait to defeat the farmers heading towards the east, but around the day before yesterday, there was a group beginning to congregate near a point close to the borders.”

“A gathering? Are they going to cross the border?”

“There is no point in them doing so. From this point on, I’m in the middle of confirming, and things will be based purely on conjecture but...”

I urge him to spit it out.

“I’ve received reports from the reconnaissance cavalry that a group of farmers are coming together a little at a time. They are probably looking to grow their numbers to the point that they can’t be dealt with when they spread out.”

During the past war, the volunteer soldiers grew to several tens of thousands in size. With the country divided up, that size is impossible now, but even so, if the squad of 5000 men is not at full strength when they clash, they won’t be able to deal with a group of several thousand people.

“I see... although it’s not like we can ignore it. How many of our troops can we use?”

“There are 2000 from the eastern army, 300 from the private army, and from the mountain nation... there are 1000 bow cavalry.”

He can’t keep calling them mountain nation when we have included them in our army. Designating them as the bow cavalry squad, their common sense is too different from the other squads and are unable to cooperate in an operation, so I have to directly take command over them.

“If we have 3300, even if they invade us, we will have enough to deal with it.”

Considering the wide territory, the ratio of cavalry in the eastern army and the private

army is large; the bow cavalry squad is also a horse-based unit as the name suggests. Giving them bows and arrows made in Goldonia will also help them to contribute more than what they're worth.

"So, what should we do? In our current situation, there is no special threat within our territory. Their troops are all moving around freely though."

"It's the first time that we move altogether, is it? It'll be a good training exercise. Let's stick around the border zone."

As expected, Adolph raised an objection.

"As it is, Treia is already on edge with the rebellion, and they hold suspicion about us from the earlier conversation. If you leave over 3000 soldiers near the border, you will provoke them and if things go poorly, an accidental war will..."

After Leopolt and I look at each other, I turn to face Adolph.

"Is there any problem?"

"I thought you would say that."

Adolph's sigh was drowned out by the soon-to-be-rowdy sounds in the mansion.



A few days later, western area around the border.

The gathered kingdom army of Treia and my army which has marched from the west to the border zone face off against one another. To the west, there are gentle hills on the border, so it wasn't a clear line. There was just an ambiguous line drawn where Treia was on one side of the hill and Goldonia was on the other. Besides, there are no villages or fields nearby, so there was no way to establish a standard other than using the terrain.

"Tell everyone strictly, the bow cavalry especially, not to climb the hill."

Both countries aren't hostile with each other, and trade isn't really restricted so it can occur freely. Thus, there is no need to be too cautious around the border line, and even

if an individual was wronged on the highway, nobody really blames each other. However, when an armed squad crosses the border, there is a different meaning. I'll let you intimidate all you want, but the first one to cross the limit will be the first to wage war.

"It'll be alright! We won't move until the chief gives the order!"

The bow cavalry, who won't listen to anyone's orders besides mine, will need to cooperate in a fast and efficient manner with the others, so that's why I brought Pipi along with me. While we were moving along, they also ignored everything else while advancing. This will need to be addressed in the future.

"And at least call me captain, if you call me chief it would cause a few problems here and there."

If my subordinates called me chief, then it would feel like I've become the king of the barbarians or something.

"I understand, great chief!"

".....so, how is it going Leopolt?"

"Since we cannot climb the hill in front of them, I erected watchtowers and posted sentries, but the situation is the same as the reports from the scouts. Around 5000 troops have been deployed such that they block off the border. However, their formation is facing the Treia side and are not defending against our attack, but rather they are probably preparing to catch the rebellions' escape."

"I see, it might have been too quick of me to bring the entire army here. But it can't be helped that we're already here. So I guess we'll be remaining here until they move?"

I gave a strict order to move again, and we formed our ranks so as to not cross the hill. It seems that Treia's side has noticed the watchtowers standing side-by-side, seemingly growing out from the bottom of the hill.

"One light cavalry is crossing the hill! He's holding a white flag and seems to be a messenger."

Celia calls out. This is also functioning as a training exercise so Celia, Irijina and

basically everyone related to the military came along. Even so, they're coming quite quickly to complain, aren't they.

"I am the second dispatch of the kingdom of Treia....."

They have to name themselves every time and it just makes me not want to listen.

"...and is there any reason in which Lord Hardlett is personally leading the army here!?"

"I don't know anything about hunting farmers or whatever, but there are 5000 soldiers moving around in the area next to my territory. Is it that rare for a feudal lord to just watch absentmindedly?"

"It is all within our territory, so Lord Hardlett is not related..."

"Of course it has nothing to do with me and I'm not looking to pick a fight. We are just moving in preparation within our own territory as well."

The messenger is probably wary of the fact that there is a possibility that we are working with the farmers and are boxing them in for a pincer attack. But if that was the case, then we would have attacked you as soon as we discovered you.

"If your army doesn't violate the border line and try to attack us, then we won't do anything."

"...Those words are not lies are they?"

"Would you like to try your luck and step over the borderline?"

After we stared at each other in silence for awhile, he told me that he didn't have any intention to cross the line since his only goal was to suppress the rebellious farmers, so he left.

"Was what you told the messenger the truth?"

To Leopolt, that messenger was probably there to deceive us, but it wasn't like that to me.

“Of course it was. No matter how many farmers they hunt in their own territory, I won’t do anything.”

In Yoguri’s case, we moved out due to my personal promise, but I don’t have any natural attachment to any other citizens outside the territory otherwise.

“Although, even if they come and attack us, we would just demolish them.”

“As expected, they’re not stupid. At this critical time when they have to deal with the rebellion, they probably wouldn’t do something so foolish. The actual experience you get while marching, constructing encampments and feeling the atmosphere of the battlefield is also important after all. So it won’t be a waste.”

The bow cavalry, previously known as the mountain nation, especially needs to be shown how my army moves and properly understand it. When I go to pet Pipi’s head, Celia, the representative of the plains people, opposes and also comes to cling to me. With both hands petting the heads of girls, you wouldn’t think that this was a battlefield.

“There is a new squad in the front! Their numbers are... they are in a disorderly formation, so details are unknown. The size is in the thousands! They are heading towards us in a straight line to the border.”

I unintentionally whistled. It seems we arrived here at the perfect time.

“It’s the group of farmers, isn’t it?”

“I’ll confirm it, just in case.”

I climb up onto the watchtower myself. It’s a simple thing, so not many people can climb on it at the same time, but if it’s just Celia and I, it shouldn’t be a problem. Leopolt climbs onto the adjacent watchtower. Irijina also wanted to look, but her weight was over the limit so she was denied access.

“For a gathering of farmers, they can conduct a decent march.”

“It’s because Arkland’s army has been dismantled and the sun has still not set yet. They probably have those who have served in the military leading them.”

That's right, right now there is a deluge of people who have served in the military in Arkland's territory. The farmers are returning home after having fought as volunteer soldiers, so it means there was a fertile ground for this large-scale rebellion to grow.

"But even so, it will be hard to break through that formation."

Although there is some semblance of order, their formation is all over the place. Since escaping is their objective, women and children are also included in the center and are being protected, which means that they can't move or change their formation quickly.

"Their numbers don't seem to reach the tens of thousands. They won't be able to win against 5000 of the Treia kingdom's army like this."

Leopolt goes and gives a negative opinion. So the only chance they have is to clash head-on and try to sneak into my territory in the heat of battle. The objective of the farmers is not to win, and only to escape after all. It's not like we can attack if they try to run in front of the Treia kingdom's army and my army.

"Can we not do anything besides just watching?"

"Well, let's see. In any case, whether the citizens die or whether the royal army suffers damage, Treia's national power will be injured. It is a pleasing thing for a neighbouring country to be weakened, and it would be the ideal situation if the citizens are annihilated and the royal army suffered large casualties."

If Yoguri was here, then she would definitely hit Leopolt. Celia is nodding in acknowledgement. Studying up on strategy is good and all, but don't turn into Leopolt. I'm a little worried so let's prank her a little.

"Hyaan!"

I slip my finger in between the gaps in her armor and rub her special place. Hearing such a cute voice all of a sudden, one of the lookouts left on the tower turned to look, but he can't see it from the front. Celia is desperately trying to regain her composure as the soldier returns his gaze to the opposite side of the hill.

(Aegir-sama! Please stop. The soldiers will find out!)

I ignore Celia, who's pleading to me in a soft voice, and my finger enters her private

part. She twists her waist to try and resist, but there is nothing she can do about the finger that has already penetrated her, and her insides are gently squeezing down on me so it's telling me that she doesn't really dislike it. Using the finger, that knows her immature caverns too well, to churn her insides, I scrape the place where she likes it the best.

"Haau!"

When that place is rubbed, Celia would moan and get turned on, but right now she's in front of the soldiers. When I see her desperately trying to endure by biting her sleeve, it makes me want to tease her more, but it would be pitiable to show the soldiers such a shameful sight, so I want to settle it quickly.

I bring my mouth close and whisper into Celia's ear.

(You're cute, Celia. Go ahead and cum.)

While whispering, I rub her favorite spot.

"Nghh!!!! —!!"

She's desperately trying to hold her voice back from climaxing by biting her sleeve, but her body is bent forward and she's leaning against me, sticking her trembling ass outward. After a short moment, a lot of liquid leaked out, dripping down her thighs.

"Haa, haa..."

She was breathing hard, but seeing as how nobody seemed to find out, her expression relaxed in relief.

"Lord Hardlett, are you finished? It seems like things are starting soon."

Knowing that Leopolt was ruthlessly watching from the beginning caused Celia to turn red, trying to fix things somehow, but seeing as how she couldn't do anything, she buried her face into my chest.

"I can see how things will turn out, but I just need to find out how many people will throw themselves in."

“I believe it is about 100 people at most, which is ideal. If a large group is successful in escaping, you can expect confusion too.”

We watch over the battle between the rebellious farmers and Treia’s army. Well, let’s see what kind of outcome it will turn into, and see it through to the end. Both armies collide with each other in front of our eyes while shouting.



-Third person/ Farmer POV-

Within the group of farmers

“Let’s go, Endigo! We have to get the women and children through no matter what!”

The farmers, who were all wearing mismatched equipment, are shouting while charging at Treia’s army. The one who is shouting is my best friend from the former Arkland’s army. He has an excessively strong sense of justice and was the one who pulled me into participating in this rebellion.

“Everyone listen! You don’t have to fight them directly. We win if we can get over that hill!”

Smooth words make smooth ways. Even as a rank-and-file soldier, I’ve been enrolled in the army for many years, and those who have ran through the battlefields many times will also understand. In order to fight against the army with our mixed bag of people, we would need triple the numbers. From what I can see, we have 8000 against an opponent who has 5000, so we absolutely can’t win. The only way we can go forward is to recklessly charge at them and try to take advantage of the confusion to cross the hill.

The vanguards of both parties collided and the battle began. In this fight, there are some amongst the group who have been hardened by battle from the experience gained from being in campaigns and also those who have armor and spears and other equipment, so they should be able to fight equally. But if you look just one step back, there are those with only spears and swords and no armor. Moreover, there are farmers who are just wielding hoes and scythes in the back.

“Cavalries are coming from the side!”

Normally, longspears would be set up in order to block them, but there isn't enough equipment nor skills required to do so. We can only ignore them and continue to advance.

Arrows rain down and the cavalry cuts down the women and elders as they please. I sweep the feet of the horses of the two cavalry that came close to cause them to fall, but I have no choice but to ignore the others. A defensive battle is meaningless, our only desire is to advance forward.

"Guwaah!!"

My companion, who has defeated five enemy soldiers already, got pierced in his stomach by the sixth one. The ones who stop moving will instantly get stabbed repeatedly.

"Endigo, go!! Don't stop!"

I was planning not to from the start. I run past them before the final blow cuts the voice of my buddy short. I defeat the enemies that appear in front of me and run earnestly. The number of women and children that we were meant to protect have also decreased in numbers, and those that remain can now be counted.

"You traitorous native lowlife! Die!"

"Shut up!"

I avoid the spear of the noble riding on his horse and stab him in the thigh with my spear instead. It was a blunt thing that was covered in rust, so it must have hurt. A crappy soldier like you would make for a good escort for the supply squad in the Arkland army I was previously in. While mocking the noble who is screaming in agony, I guide the others forward, running through one by one.

"Just a little more! Once we pass the hill, they won't come after us anymore."

Perhaps because of the encirclement of the collection of allies in the back, there weren't many pursuits on us. If that's the case, we can run away successfully.

The ones at the front cheered as they climbed the hill and started to run down it. The

Treia army gave up on the group who climbed the hill, not pursuing them, and giving their all to decimate the group in the back instead. I feel sorry for those in the back, but they probably knew that it would turn into something like this. Even so, it is ironic that I am extending my life when I have no interest in living, while my buddy who told me about his dream has died.

Once we ran to the middle of the hill, we turned back to look, even when we knew it was pointless. It was there that we saw a certain scene.

There is a married couple running away while protecting their small child, but due to their fatigue, their speed was slow, so Treia's soldiers have caught up to them. The desperately resisting father was instantly slain and the mother was also stabbed through her chest. With the sudden deaths of both parents, the child starts crying, and after the soldiers swung down their swords, they left in search for another target. This was probably going on all around as well, but something sparked in my mind.

Just one month ago, I also had a wife and child. Due to the heavy taxes, it was hard for us to eat, and I was able to earn a daily living by doing a boring job, but the child who was still young could not survive the poor lifestyle.

It was there that my wife started to plead with the acting official to have some compassion for her. But the acting official wanted equal compensation from the visiting wife, demanding her body, which she complied with for the sake of her child. And sure enough, after playing around with her body as he pleased, he threw her away like a piece of trash.

The struggle with food continued, the child weakened and died. After losing our child, and my wife, who even had her body toyed with, thought that she lost everything. I went out to bury my child and when I returned home, my wife had committed suicide.

Since then, my time has frozen in place, and I had lost all meaning to live. My resentment and my sadness disappeared, and I was just living in a trance-like state. That's why I was pulled along by my buddy and without hesitation participated in this rebellion, which clearly had such a small chance to succeed.

Another family was finished off in front of my eyes. Probably at this point in time, several hundred parents and children have perished.

I have to stop this. The emotion that was awakened in my heart is anger. If I don't crush

them, the sorrow I have tasted will repeat endlessly.

“But even if I go back there, there’s nothing I can do...”

If I leave everything to my anger, run down the hill and attack those guys, I will still meet the same fate as my buddy. Cutting down a few soldiers makes no difference.

At that time, those guys who have climbed up the hill pointed at something and shouted. There was a row of watchtowers, and several thousand soldiers lined up. I thought it was an enemy ambush but it didn’t look like they were coming to attack. Sending my eyes further back, their flag is...

“The Goldonian army! Have they come to save us!?”

With this amount of soldiers, they should be able to repel Treia. Moreover, there are an abnormal amount of cavalry. The cavalry should be a bad opponent to the Treian army, which had prepared to deal with the farmers.

“Heeeeeey!! Please help us! Everyone is getting killed over there!”

I call out loudly but there was no response. If I think carefully, since they have already built watchtowers, they should be able to see the situation on the bottom of the hill, and if they were going to help us, they would have come long ago.

“They’re just keeping watch... No, is it because they can’t cross the border?”

Everyone knows that Treia and Goldonia worked together to crush Arkland. They probably don’t want to interfere with an incident happening within our territory.

“Is it useless?!... but if that’s the case why do they have such a large army at the border zone?”

The ones at my side who have desperately run into the safety zone naturally couldn’t hear my voice. It wasn’t an answer, but I felt a strong gaze from the top of the watchtower. When I look up, that gaze came from a man wearing a black cloak, who looks like a noble, and it was unusual to have such a pretty woman clad in armor on the battlefield by his side.

“The war demon Hardlett!!”

I remember seeing that face. In the Datrohn fight where I was serving in the military, he blew away my allies away like ragdolls right in front of my eyes, and he was a knight out of a nightmare. I knew I was aiming for his territory, but I didn't think that he would actually show up in person!

Those eyes gaze at me without any sense of timidness. I try to tell him to 'please help me, since right now my friends are being killed over there. If it's you, you should be able to help'.

But he doesn't move. Even so, his eyes don't avert themselves from me. It felt like he was smiling a little. It wasn't a sneering smile that thought of me as a fool, but he was seeking something dramatic. It seemed like that kind of smile to me.

Nobody said anything, but at least that was what I felt.

"Fine, my life is pretty much thrown away. Why don't I show you the best play!"

I turn back to the side where Treia's army is while standing on the summit of the hill.

"Listen here! I'll teach you incompetent fools of Treia, who can do nothing but kill women and children! I am in fact the leader of the rebellion, the one responsible for turning the revolt against you stupid people!!"

A voice came out that surprised even myself. The nearby soldiers quickly turned back to face me. Being the only one standing on the stage is not a bad feeling.

"Even if you kill the others, it will result in the same thing; I will once again come back and cause another revolt in a different place!"

The Treian soldiers start to gather. Conveniently, the archers are standing in the front.

"What's wrong? If you don't kill me, things will repeat itself again and again! Although you guys are such amateurs that even if someone was to stand in front of you, your arrows couldn't even hit them. Shoot me if you can."

A portion of the archers got enraged and nocked arrows on their bows, but the commander hurriedly stopped them. As expected they would not fall for such a simple tactic. When I look, the nearby soldiers have already gathered at the bottom of the hill,

surrounding it with all of its members. But none of them climbed up the hill to try and catch me. There is no one with the courage to step over the border line.

“What’s wrong?! Incompetents! Fools! Trash! Are you cowards who can’t even shoot the enemy?!”

In response to the resounding voice, the sound of gritting teeth can be heard.

“Tell the entire squad, absolutely don’t shoot! It will be shot into Goldonia’s territory!”

A noble-like man shouts while running in front of the archers on his horse. I also curse at that noble but other than glaring at me, he doesn’t take any action. I have to hurry, or else the battle will continue and the people at the back will be annihilated. When I look around for a way to breakthrough this deadlock, I found a familiar flag. Since I was in the army, I recognize the flags of certain nobles.

“Aren’t you Viscount Mezale?! I am a citizen of your territory. Is your little brother doing well?”

The one who scrunches his face is a muscular man with a large build; it’s the first time I saw his face, but it seems like he is the viscount.

“How rude of me! I have killed the younger brother! Did you want to confirm the corpse?”

Of course that was a lie. I just want him to hear the story where an unknown person killed Viscount Mezale’s younger brother during the citizens’ revolt.

“To harm a noble, what a vulgar lowlife of a citizen!”

This is good, the older brother is definitely as he appears and has a quick temper.

“Your younger brother had a magnificent body like that of a pig and a brave heart like a chicken. It is truly regrettable that he passed away.”

“How dare you, how dare you! You mock the dead, someone shut him up!”

The elder Mezale brother turns red and bellows and his subordinates get their spears ready, also drawing their bow strings at his order.

“Lord Mezale, calm down! This is the enemy’s trap.”

The surrounding nobles are desperately trying to soothe him but having gotten this mad already, they couldn’t do so.

“I will tell you how your younger brother met his end. I thrust a metal skewer into his asshole, and turned him into a living shishkabob. He was like a pig so it looked delicious, but his agonizing cries were just like a sheep’s.”

“Uooooo! Shoot him! That savage man! That brute of a man – that rebel! Kill himmm!!”

The soldiers could not disobey the orders made from their master in anger. Arrows were fired one after the other, flying straight at me. Almost as if the flow of time has slowed down, I could see each individual arrow. I spread my arms out to receive the arrows and close my eyes. The first one, then another – I could feel the sensation of each arrow piercing my body.

But they were unable to shoot accurately to pierce a single human with several dozen arrows and a few arrows missed their target, falling on the ground in front of me.....

Several arrows flew over my head, flying all the way to the other side of the hill.

Even after my body got pierced with over 10 arrows, I felt no pain, I only felt a sense of satisfaction. I twist my head to face Lord Hardlett and smile.

Wasn’t it an interesting turn of events? How is this?

My vision gets hazy and I could no longer tell what kind of face he was making, but I did all that I could. I have no regrets. Will I meet my wife and child in the underworld? As my field of vision gradually darkens, I stretch my hand out to try and find my lost family, as my consciousness completely falls into the dark.



-Aegir POV-

Goldonia Camp

The situation is as expected: the Treian army is beginning their massacre and only a small number of citizens were able to crawl into my territory using that gap. However one man stopped moving and sought for help from me. Of course, I have no obligation to listen to him. But the man wasn't cursing at me, and after a slight smile he provoked the Treian army, and his whole body was showered in arrows, passing away shortly after.

If you wanted to talk about results, this is all he did.

"Aegir-sama!"

The last thing he left in this world are the few arrows that flew all the way over to our territory, nothing more. The arrows that missed their target and flew all the way here were stuck into the ground harmlessly.

But one of the arrows had flew into the leg of one of the soldiers in our ranks. The unfortunate infantry held his leg and fell over, but the wound wasn't deep and after stopping the light bleeding, it would be fine. However that still meant that the Treian army has fired arrows over the border line and hurt one of my army's soldiers.

"Leopolt, can this become the reason for us to attack them?"

"Obviously. Something like releasing arrows which violate the border laws is the same as declaring war. If it was an accident, however, there is still room to negotiate."

The man on the top of the hill who became like a porcupine was probably aiming for this. His deliberate acting was comical but his courage was the real deal. It would have been easy for him to choose life. Just a few more steps on the hill towards our side and nobody would have been able to harm him anymore.

Even now, the face of the man on top of the hill shows his satisfaction of accomplishing what he set out to do and it doesn't show neither fear nor shame. What a rather foolish but interesting man. At the very least he was more so than the Treian army who were

killing the citizens in front of me.

“Leopolt, Celia, order the entire army to attack.”

“Yessir!”

“It will probably become an all-out war. Are you alright with that?”

“We can win, can’t we?”

I haven’t thought about it, but it looks like he has something in mind.

“I don’t think it will become such a bad future.”

He doesn’t betray my expectations. Then why don’t we start this war?

As I got off the tower, Celia immediately gave them the order and the entire squad formed ranks. All that is left is a single order from me.

“Tell it to the entire army! Just now, there was an attack on our army by the Treian army on the other side of the hill. This is a clear hostile act. Thus, we will now eliminate this threat and invade into Treia!”

There is no commotion. Everyone saw that the arrow flew over here and everyone was trained to the extent that they would not get scared of fighting.

“But before we march forward, let’s get our revenge first. Archer squad, bow cavalry, release a volley to the other side of the hill. We’ll return the favor 100 times over!”

Following the rain of steel of over 1000 arrows, the entire army goes over the hill and flows into Treia like an avalanche. Goldonia and Treia were not hostile to each other. This war was started by me and I will be the one to fight it.

Aegir Hardlett: 20 years old – Wartime Mode

Squad

Eastern Independent Army: 2000

Cavalry: 500, Archers: 300, Infantry: 1200

Normal Private Army: 300

Cavalry: 200, Infantry: 100

Bow Cavalry: 1000

Cavalry: 1000

Total: 3300

Subordinates: Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Celia (Adjutant),
Irijina (normal Private Army Commander), Pipi (communication duties)

Current location: Treia kingdom, Eastern area border zone

Achievements: —

CHAPTER 74

TREIA CONFLICT ②

A SURGING INVASION

-Third Person/Treia POV-

“Lord Mezale..... what have you done?!”

“An arrow has flown to Goldonia’s side! They won’t let us just apologize now!”

The unknown citizen shouting on top of the hill has become a corpse. But there were no cheers from the soldiers, and the nearby commanders and nobles are also stunned.

That is natural; the arrows released by Viscount Mezale after getting provoked has taken the life of the detestable rebel, but the arrows which failed to hit their targets crossed over the hill and flew into Goldonia territory. Moreover, the feudal lord’s army was on the other side in their formation already, and the arrows fell on their heads. Many citizens and soldiers have witnessed that very act of brutality so there is no escaping the situation now.

“Lord Mezale, you bastard!”

The commander of the entire army, the person who was trying to calm the soldiers down, desperately saw his own efforts go to waste as he pressed Mezale for answers.

“Logjeel-dono, question him afterwards. First, we have to give the Goldonia-side some sort of excuse or else it will turn into something troublesome!”

The man acting as the staff officer glares at the drooping Mezale, but he also remonstrates Logjeel.

“Good, now send an urgent messenger. Make it one with as high a status as possible.”

“We are currently still hunting over half of the farmers so it will take a little time, but I will hurry as much as I can.”

The staff officer sends out a horse.

“Lord Mezale, you forced us into a disadvantage in the negotiations with Goldonia this time! You better prepare yourself!”

Logjeel is worrying about the upcoming negotiations in his mind. There was nothing he could do for his army about the mistake. Even if a story was fabricated that the flown arrow was due to a noble's younger sibling being hurt, it's not something he could complain about. It would be nice if it could be settled by just paying compensations, since it would be troublesome if it turns into a conversation about territory. The changing of border lines is a cross-national issue and must be reported to your home country's government no matter what. If the conclusion of this incident turns into something unsightly, his leadership ability will no doubt be questioned and the royal family would also have a poor impression of him.

Once again, he glared at Viscount Mezale, telling him that he really did something unnecessary, and it was at that point when his worries disappeared – worries about paying compensation, about the cession of territory – it was as if he had no problems in the first place. He didn't even feel there was a need to send a messenger either.

The accidental shooting of those few arrows did not matter at all. That's because of the rain of steel – over 1000 arrows came pouring down on him from above.



-Aegir POV-

“Charge!!”

From my one command, the cavalry squad began to charge all at once. It was the pattern of attack where, after you gift them with a rain of arrows, the cavalry charges in to crush the distraught enemies.

In the blink of an eye, the army composed of the eastern army's spear cavalry and heavy cavalry, and also the bow cavalry – formerly the mountain nation – gallops over the shallow hill. The bow cavalry stops at the peak of the hill and release their arrows continuously, which have increased in power due to the difference in height. The power of the newly upgraded Goldonian-made bows is incomparable to that of their previous crudely-made bows, and unless the enemies are equipped with heavy plate

armor, the arrows will pierce through their defenses.

The heavy cavalry and the spear cavalry are pushing through the enemies under the support from those arrows. The enemy infantry also had longspear squads here and there, but due to the storm of arrows, they couldn't get into formation and were trampled over. No matter how strong longspears were against cavalry, they will only be able to withstand frontal attacks. If you circle around them, they turn into nothing more than slow-witted infantry.

"You despicable person, oppressor of the people, I'll punish you!"

Irijina thrusts her spear while riding as the lead vanguard of the spear cavalry. Swinging her spear from atop her horse, she vanquishes one Treian soldier after the other. Maybe she feels resentment that the people of her home country are being oppressed. To the citizens, the Arkland army were the most cruel, but I'll purposely not say that to this innocent girl.

"Soryaa!"

After finishing off about five of them, a herd of enemy spearmen obstructed her, but soon after, a rain of arrows poured down from the top of the hill. The squad of spearmen quickly collapsed, and once again, Irijina was able to resume her rampage. Watching her go wild makes me excited too.

"Leopolt, take command."

"Don't over do it."

Objectively speaking, I would rather go wild on the battlefield than stay in the headquarters and give commands. Leopolt was originally the one who took control of the entire squad after all.

"I'll accompany you."

"Pipi is going too."

Celia and Pipi, as well as the selected ten accompanying cavalry came along, bringing their horses with them. As expected, Leopolt and Celia earnestly asked them to stop me from riding out alone. According to what Leopolt said, if I were to die by myself,

then the entire squad would crumble and it would be quite a nuisance to him.

“I won’t make such a blunder though.”

I penetrate into the center of the enemy formation, and lop off the head of the guy who looks like a noble, and is causing a commotion and panicking while on horseback at the sudden frontal attack. As a matter of fact, there really is no meaning in hesitating to attack. In addition, in terms of numbers, the enemy has 5000 and our allies are 3000 strong; even considering their loss more or less in their fight with the farmers, we are still at a numerical disadvantage. It would be the best if we can crush the enemy while they’re confused.

“Wh-what’s going on?!!”

I pierce the torso of the flustered commander and trample over the infantry acting as guards. After I swung my spear completely, an infantry suddenly came from my flank so I used my left hand to punch him away.

“Gueh!”

“Hiih! Monster!”

Who’s the monster? I just smashed his head apart with my fist. I return the favor to the rude soldier by grabbing him by the throat with my bloody left hand and snapping his neck.

The enemy soldiers slowly withdraw while pointing their weapons at me. I can’t say that they are brave compared to the mountain nation or even my own soldiers. That reminds me, Treia didn’t send out much offense in the battle in Arkland.

Then, three enemy heavy cavalry brandished their large lances at me and came charging. It seems that the enemy has some people who can deal with the situation quickly too. I bring my spear up as well and was going to meet them but, just before making contact, the three of them, having removed their helmets for breathing and to gain a better field of view, took arrows in their face and fell off their horse.

“Chief! What do you think of Pipi’s skill?”

“Three of them in just ten seconds?... how impressive.”

I focused only on the precision of her horseback shooting, but the speed of her volley was just as quick. Even amongst the mountain nation, Pipi is in a class of her own, but looking at the state of battle, the bow cavalry are also one-sidedly overwhelming the Treian army. The plains already make them powerful, but gaining composite bows and superior quality arrows multiplied their ability several times over. Their statures match their horses, and are quite small, so the speed at which they run in a straight line are inferior to that of regular cavalry. However, when trying to escape with them shooting at you from the back, it is an arduous task.

The Treian army took damage from the surprise attack and wanted to run away quickly. It wasn't enough damage to destroy them, but the battle which started all of a sudden lowered their morale.

"Bow cavalry, bring down the escaping enemies from behind! Heavy cavalry and spear cavalry will charge into the enemies that are fighting the farmers!"

No matter how delicate and precise your shooting is, if you shoot an arrow into a large free-for-all where everyone is at grappling distance with each other, you will indiscriminately wound people. It might come back to bite us in the ass later.

I'm at the front of the leading heavy cavalry and jump into the fray where the Treian army and farmers are fighting, cutting down whichever enemy is within my range. The slain enemies get shredded and scatter all over. It was natural for the Treian soldiers, but even the farmers that I should be saving are standing there dazed and young women also fainted. It's not like I want to brutally kill them, it's just that my spear is in the heavyweight class and everything it touches gets torn to pieces.

"Why is the Goldonian army-?!"

"Why weren't they mentioned to us?!"

There's nothing I can do to answer these guys' question. I just bore my spear through the center of the two knights' bodies who can't deal with the situation and end them.

"Aegir-sama, the enemy is collapsing on all fronts. If the infantry squad takes part as well, it should be a rout."

Celia is standing on her knees while riding her horse and trying to grasp the situation

by elevating her vision. It's quite the unreasonable posture, so be careful not to fall.

"Let's do that. In the end, it's just an accidental battle, so there is no need so annihilate the enemy."

Suddenly, a single group amongst the chaos was discovered to be escaping as fast as they could. They were riding on horses in a formation where a single man was surrounded by the others and everyone was wearing flashy and outstanding battle gear.

"The commander, huh?... Why don't I crush him while I'm at it."

I thought about throwing my spear, but the distance is over 50 m and I don't think I can hit someone on a horse.

"Pipi, that flashy guy in the middle – Can you get him?"

"Yeah. If I hit him, are you gonna give me a reward?"

What a cutie, I'll have to give her some snacks that I secretly brought later.

"The wind is blowing sideways, wait a bit."

Pipi wets her finger with some saliva and held it up in the air, and after the wind ceases momentarily, she swiftly nocks an arrow and releases it. While we were waiting, the distance between him and us grew to over 100 m, but the arrow rose up diagonally and as if it got sucked down, pierced the side of the man's head dead on. All of a sudden, the man stiffened straight up on his horse and fell off. It was impossible to avoid instant death from getting an arrow to the head.

"Charge! Rout the enemy!"

On the order from Celia's cute shout, the infantry squad also began their invasion. The Treian army's lines, having been divided by the cavalry doing as they pleased, completely collapsed as soon as the infantry charged in, and even the farmers pursued them to chase them away.

"The reward, I'm looking forward to it."

Seeing how the battle is over, Pipi skillfully jumped back on Schwartz. When she buried her face into my chest, I realized that we had different definitions of rewards in our minds.

“It’s Aegir-sama’s victory!... why are you on the same horse as Aegir-sama?”

Without answering the narrow-eyed Celia, we ride up in front of the farmers who have sunk to the floor. The reactions of the farmers were all uniformly favorable.

“Hurray for Goldonia!”

“I thought we were done for.”

“That person is Lord Hardlett!?”

“In the flesh...”

While Celia and Leopolt are getting the formation in order, it is necessary to calm the people down.

“Everyone listen! This battle was caused by the fact that the kingdom of Treia crossed our border by sending an attack at us. I am not here to support your rebellion, but I won’t stop anyone who wants to enter my territory.”

Cheers erupted from everyone. I don’t have any particular emotional attachment to them, but when I see sisters hugging each other while crying, I feel like I’ve done a good deed. If possible, I want to hug them altogether.

“However, when you enter my territory, you are not permitted to carry weapons. Swords, spears and anything in the same vein will all have to be abandoned.”

After they’ve been disarmed, the rest will be left to Adolph. Since then, I talked a bit with Leopolt but they couldn’t wait for that. But, there was also a line of farmers who rushed to do so out of happiness.

“Viscount Hardlett-sama, we supported the rebellion but we aren’t farmers. We are soldiers of the standing army. Since Arkland has disappeared, we have had no place to go... so could you add us into your army?”

Normally guys like these would become mercenaries, but Treia's occupation policies don't allow that.

"Then, go until Rafen along with the farmers. You'll be newly employed there as part of the private army since I can't do so right now."

The upcoming operation will demand speed and leadership ability. We'll be entering into enemy territory as it is, so I don't want to bring along people of unknown nature. Just increasing our numbers from those gathered here would only slow us down.

The people left to the east and our preparations are finished.

"Leopolt, have you told the royalty?"

"Yes, I have already dispatched a messenger to tell the kingdom of the accident-caused collision of forces. The horse will take two days to reach the capital and two days to get back, so a total of four days will be needed for this task to get accomplished."

"Then, let's hurry."

The ones lined up are just the cavalry and the supply wagon. The slow-footed infantry will act as the citizens' escorts and surveillance as they head back to Rafen. What is needed from this point on is overwhelming speed.

"All troops, move out! Let's overtake those Treian guys."



-Third person/ Erich POV-

Two days later, Capital of Goldonia

"...What is that guy doing?"

Erich, having saw the letter, realized that he is turning pale. There are three things written in there:

The Treian army and the rebelling farmers are skirmishing on the outskirts of the border in the western area, so I have sortied just to be vigilant.

In the same place, we were attacked by the Treian army and are counterattacking, so I will need to defeat them.

In order to completely eliminate the threat, I am pursuing the escaping enemy and starting our advance into Treian territory.

The contents in those brief sentences was sufficient enough for Erich to halt his official duties and seek an audience with the king. A letter with the same contents should have been delivered to the royalty as well.

“Just when I thought you moved to your territory just recently, you go and cause some conflict so soon...”

There isn't anyone around Erich but he couldn't help but grumble.



“Your Majesty, I believe you are in a good mood...”

“Please stop it Erich, if even you compliment me so, I'll get fed up.”

The king... Alexandro the first asked the servant to leave and got the kneeling Erich to stand up.

“Then, please excuse me. This time, to ask for such a sudden audience...”

As if the king knew what was going to be said, he held out the letter.

“The letter has also reached me. It seems Hardlett has gone and done it. “

The king spread his arms to show his worry and smiles bitterly.

“It is my lack of supervision. I sincerely apologize.”

“What are you saying? Lord Hardlett is a noble that I have granted with the Viscount title, and is your colleague. There is no one but me who should take responsibility.”

That is so in theory, but the fact that Erich is here as the representative of the new

nobles means that he wants to be involved in this situation.

“In any case, only a fool would complain about something that has already happened. I want to know how we can settle this conflict.”

“In the letter, it says that they were attacked first. If this is the truth, his overreactions will more or less be pardoned. The problem is that the witnesses are the escaping people... If you look from Treia’s side, they are traitors. They may insist that the people will lie just for the sake of putting them at a disadvantage.”

“Hm, is it on the premise that Lord Hardlett led his troops first?”

“Well, I believe that since it was an accidental clash, there first had to have been a ceasefire after the troops have been led.”

Erich returns something obvious to the king with a dubious face, but the king silently goes into thinking.

“The letter was sent the day before yesterday, right? It will depend on how far he has advanced during the two days.”

Erich spreads the map that he brought on the desk. He is also a veteran general who has led armies many times; he can precisely ascertain the marching speed of the army.

“Treia’s army got routed so there aren’t any decent enemies in the western area. If they can advance as they please, then they will be at this point, and if at that time they sent a messenger that arrived in two days, then they should have arrived around the outskirts of this city called Mayse.”

“They unexpectedly didn’t progress much.”

“The time an army can march in a single day, excluding resting time, is about six hours, and it will take even longer if they aren’t familiar with the land. This calculation also takes into account whether the march is going well.”

“Then give the order for them to stop near this city of Mayse. At the same time, we will send a messenger to Treia to tell them we will hold negotiations with the prerequisite of them having to withdraw their troops. Will that be sufficient?”

“Yes. I believe that is ideal, however they may act out of emotion from having people step on their land and may not abide by the ceasefire. Just in case, I will arrange for the central army to prepare for battle.”

Then, the king unusually said something inarticulate.

“Erich, this is a hypothetical thought. If you let Hardlett do as he pleases, how much trouble do you think he’ll stir up in Treia?”

“...I purposely try not to ask that question, but the skill and equipment of the eastern army under his command is not that different from that of the central army’s. Including the private army, his military force should be limited to around 3000. He has a lot of cavalry so he might push the enemies around in the plains, but he shouldn’t be able to reach the fortress city in the west of the central area. When Treia eventually calls together a full-fledged army, then he won’t be much of a match.”

“So when Treia directs their troops at him, how about if the central army descends on them from the northern area?”

Erich looks up for a second, but continues on.

“Treia will disappear from the map. But...”

“My country will lose its great cause and all the surrounding nations will become enemies... right?”

“Yes.”

The king breathes out a single sigh.

“This is also hypothetical, but how much can the central army crush the kingdom of Treia?”

“It will take two months to draw out their main force. If they get on the defensive, then we can only pray to God.”

The Treian army is not all that powerful, but there is a fortress in the northern border from the long years of conflict with Arkland. That thing is composed of a group of thick forts and is the main reason why even Treia, who is inferior in military strength, could

withstand the full-scale invasion from Arkland. It's not easy to get through even with concentrated fire from siege weapons.

"The difference in their military force is growing day by day. It should be easier to force them out from their occupied territory. But when it comes to the homeland..."

"It won't be possible to detour from the eastern area either?"

"The road is too poor and unsuitable to move a large army on it. The highway on the eastern area is still under construction."

"I guess it's still a little too early."

The king smiles bitterly.

"Very well. However, as much as Lord Hardlett is superior in battle, the amount of troops I lent him only number 2000. If he were to get attacked by a full-fledged military force then he would be pushed into his own territory. A diversion is needed."

"Well that is... Even so, if it's true that he has defeated 5000 enemies in this touch-and-go situation, he's quite impressive."

The king raises his voice and breaks his posture.

"He has a bad behavior, but he's not one to boast. It is rare for a man of that caliber on the battlefield to exist, but he is also a first-class commander."

Erich knows. His strong point is that he can swing a spear, and by no means does he have high ability to command several thousand soldiers. To compensate for that, he has that subordinate called Leopolt.

It is certainly the case for his own subordinates, but even comparing to Erich himself, it is estimated that he has superior leadership abilities and scheming abilities. It wasn't like he searched around specifically for skilled men, so how did he pick up such an outstanding talent – Erich is feeling this kind of jealousy.

That's why Erich's doubts won't end. If he has a man with such sharp wits with him, he should understand that there is no meaning of getting so deeply involved in this accidental clash of forces.

“As I said earlier, Lord Hardlett is not officially your subordinate or anything. I will send a messenger in the name of the royal family. You will rest easy and return to your mansion.”

“I understand. But it doesn’t seem that I can feel relieved just yet. My stomach is getting sick just thinking of what he will make a mess of next.”

The king laughs loudly while Erich lowers his head and leaves the room.

In Erich’s head, the news of Baron Pedot getting attacked by barbarians and the damage report, and the request of the debt incurred for the sake of burying the damage were ranked in the far back. There has also been an appeal raised by the citizens complaining that he was doing dirty acts to newborn children as well. The meaning of being cordial was also not mentally there.



-Aegir POV-

Three days later, Former Arkland, Kingdom of Treia Territory

“It looks like the response from the royalty is here.”

It seems that the messenger rode his horse during dusk to get here. When I asked him, it seems we were not at the place he initially thought, so it took an extra day for him to arrive.

“Oh, read it to me.”

The letter is handed over so Leopolt and Celia, who is behind me, moves. Since Leopolt is shorter than me, she can sneak a peek from behind if she desperately stands on her tiptoes.

“We will stop at the city of Mayse without attacking and there will be a ceasefire while we wait to hold negotiations...?”

Ooh, Irijina is holding Celia up. She struggled for a bit, but calmed down when she realized she could see the letter easier.

Well, right now we are in the mansion that we confiscated from the nobles of the town we occupied just this morning.

“So Mayse is the name of this city?”

“No, it’s not. This city is called Valeora and it’s the core city of the center area of former Arkland. We passed Mayse two days ago. That feudal lord knight was shouting loudly...”

Oh yeah, that knight who turned into a porcupine after he charged toward the front of the bow cavalry desiring a duel while shouting in a loud voice! Since then, I told the mountain nation through Pipi that if they had room to spare, to let them talk until the end.

“To tell us to stop over there at this point in time.”

“It’s a good indication. Even for the Goldonian army, it means that our marching speed is faster than they expected.”

The distance from Mayse to here is much longer than the distance from the border to Mayse. The speed of our advance is scary if I do say so myself, and it was over three times faster than the speed I experienced in the central army. The bow cavalry acted as the main force, and was not hindered by the state of the highway, while the other cavalry also practiced marching quickly in the wilderness; these two factors were critical. I guess you can say that not getting satisfaction from being on a road is the byproduct of getting used to living in this remote region.

From the start, we didn’t intend to take the cities and villages in the vicinity of the border. We just took advantage of the escaping enemy and the confusion and encroached all the way to the main city. We shouldn’t be able to hold it, but if we take a city of that size, we should be able to confiscate the fortune of the nobles and merchants.

“It’s just like we’re brigands.”

“The one who suggested this was you.”

Not to mention, if we hold down the city, it will work in our advantage. If they intend

to take it back by force, then we can just burn down the entire town and withdraw. Since there is such an overwhelming difference in mobility, we will always have the initiative. If we wanted to run, we can retreat anytime we want to.

Valeora is a relatively large city with a population of several thousand residents and also has an outer wall installed. They do not have an army in the garrison, so they had no defense to use against us when we appeared so suddenly though.... Normally, this kind of city would not abandon its defenses. However, after the battle the other day, and because of the continued fleeing of the Treian army and the destruction of the support squad transporting army provisions, who were unaware of the defeat of the main troops, the desire for the army to rebuild its defense was severed. Besides focusing on escaping to the west, they didn't do anything else.

The guards who protected Valeora didn't put up a fight when they saw over 1000 cavalry and surrendered. The nobles inside the city scrambled to be the first ones to run out of the city with just the clothes on their backs. I thought about capturing them, but without those people here it would make it easier for us to loot their belongings, so I left them alone. Also, the pretext was ultimately eliminating the threat in my territory so it would cause all sorts of trouble if I had to deal with the nobles in this city.

"You did something to the servant, didn't you. This morning, there was a half-naked girl on the verge of crying."

"I was talked into doing that, but I just kissed and caressed her. I didn't attack her."

She's an inexperienced girl from a decent family, and when she saw the raw desires of a man when he's raring to go, she got scared. I didn't think that she would cry after I got her naked and licked her all over.

That aside though, it's difficult to obey the instructions from the royalty. Well, what should I do?

"Let's just explain our situation and ignore the orders. The battlefield takes priority, according to the judgement of those at the location."

"I guess. I will not break the policy of waiting for the ceasefire so I'll have them overlook the location a little. I hope these negotiations can be settled quickly before Erich's stomach ruptures."

There are plenty of scouts around Valeora so if a large army comes, they'll run away. The Treian nobles and purveyors of the government escaped and all the other citizens are generally friendly. If I think about the fact that we set up camp here in the wilderness while waiting for the ceasefire, it's like heaven. I'll leave the negotiations to Leopolt while I have some fun.



"The talks about politics are over. Irijina, Celia, can you attend to me?"

The time is already close to midnight. After the battle, the women I brought along to slam my lust into ran away, so my body is overflowing.

"Leave it to me!"

"Yes, sincerely."

Irijina enters the bedroom and throws off all her clothes. On the other hand, Celia leaves just her underwear on. She wants to increase my arousal by letting me slip them off myself. Celia is just a studious person so she has been learning night etiquette from Melissa and Rita, so I can't let my guard down.

"Nuu... You like Celia more than me?"

While bathing in Irijina's pouting voice, I slowly lower Celia's underwear. Celia's tight but soft little ass, her tightly closed vagina, and her thin spread of silver pubic hair were all exposed.

"Pl- please give me a kiss."

The embarrassment of playing with the idea of a plan probably didn't disappear. Celia covers her face, dyed in red, with both hands and mumbles in a quiet voice, completely different compared to how she usually is when she gives out orders to the soldiers. I grab her pretty white ass and crawl my tongue over her genitals, sucking her clit as well.

"Aau! It's embarrassing."

“It’s expanded quite a bit to accommodate my thing, hasn’t it.”

Celia’s hole has expanded well with respect to her physique since she has been receiving my cock so frequently. If it expands a little more, I can really use my hips and move. I dug my tongue deep into her pussy, but her pubic hair touches my nose. When we first met, hair had hardly grown there, but now it has properly grown to show its presence. Her silver pubic hair, which has the same color as her hair, seems to have been groomed as well, as there is no feeling of uncleanness.

“Aauu, I’m happy that you’re going there, but if you could also kiss me up here...”

While still standing, I hug Celia from the front and met her with a hot kiss. Her womanly scent caused my cock to get erect and form a tent in my pants.

“You’re already hard. I’ll make it more comfortable for you right away, ‘kay?”

Celia tactfully removed my pants, and when I get naked with her, we both hug each other once again. The ever-hardening cock sticks to her chest and breasts.

“No matter how many times I see it, it’s amazing... When I see it, it feels like you’ve become a villain, ah-!”

I pick Celia up sideways and carry her to the bed, tossing her on top. It’s a little rough, but there are many women who prefer it like this, her included. It tells her that I’m going to make love to her and stirs her heart. Especially for Nonna, if I just whisper sweet words in her ear, she’d start flooding, even if I didn’t caress her.

“Go ahead and relieve yourself like this.”

Celia relaxes while facing up and I repeatedly give her small bud diligent kisses. When it has gotten plenty wet, I grab both her legs and spread them wide, pushing myself into her special place.

“Hiiuu-!”

First up is the thickest part: the tip.

“Haauuuuu!”

Following that, I slowly push the rod in, embrace her and take a break. Her hole should have loosened up rather nice, but it's spread to the limit and seems to be making creaking sounds. If I don't get it properly wet and move little by little, it looks like she'll get hurt. Moreover, she absolutely won't tell me if it hurts her so I'll have to guess it from the amount of cold sweat. Right now, her thin eyebrows are relaxed so she must really be feeling pleasure.

"How is it? Does it feel good?"

"Yeeess! Please don't hold back and thrust all the way to the back."

I push deeper inside, encouraged by Celia's sweet words and indulge in the pleasure. Even after I buried it to the deepest part, there is still about half of my cock left, but I am slowly getting more aroused from the feeling of pushing apart the tiny hole and the cute desperately clinging girl.

"Aegir-sama! Aegir-samaaa!"

Even while being toyed with from the movements of a man, she is desperately giving me kisses on my chest and nape again and again. With those lovable actions and her hole tightening enough to almost make a sound, my pleasure builds up until I arrive at the final moment.

"Celia, cling to me."

"Yess! Please grant me your affection inside-!"

I suck strongly on the girl's nape, who's clinging onto my body with both arms and legs, and release all the pent up semen. Feeling the sperm ejaculate into her, she let out a long and extended moan as she gradually loses strength and collapses on the bed.

"Luhv yuu. I luhrv uu, Aegir-samaaa."

Her eyes lost their point of focus and she's not articulating properly. It looks like she climaxed nicely. After I do some post-coital activity of fondling her growing breasts and sucking her nipples, I pull my cock out.

"Sorry to keep you waiting Irijina, you have... already gotten prepared, I see."

Irijina was comforting herself while watching Celia and I have sex. When I see that she already has three fingers inside, I don't even have to do foreplay.

"How do you want to do it?"

"From the back... roughly please."

She placed her hands on the desk instead of the bed and turned her ass towards me as I penetrate her, causing sounds of intense flesh slapping to echo throughout the room, with a violent man's groans and joyful womanly moans as the accompaniment. Midway through, her pleasure built up quite quickly and I grabbed her hips, forcefully inserting myself all the way to the root, causing Irijina to squirt and collapse.

"Aaaah... It went up to the root, oh no! The juices won't stop squirting."

Of course, I mercilessly continue to slam my hips into the fallen woman, putting my entire weight on her. Celia has woken up and has begun to masturbate on the bed as she watches our animal-like copulation. I release inside Irijina and as I let go of her body, Celia comes over shyly. When I think about how I'll attack her next, I get aroused and my dick swells up again. As expected, Irijina's hole is also super tight, stretching to its limit, making it hard to move.

"Thick... It's too thickk. It's almost as if he put in his arm..."

A strained force comes from Irijina as she is being pressed. Her consciousness must have flown elsewhere, but first I'll have to be affectionate with the woman below me.

"Irijina, I'm going to be rough on you now. Don't hesitate to feel good."

"O-okay. I might lose consciousness but don't worry and release your seed."

I roar and Irijina lets out a high-pitched scream which doesn't match her body. I thrust into her so much that her body bends and twists, and just as she warned, she fainted as I pump my seed deep into her wobbling body.

"Come here."

I pull myself out from Irijina, but this semen-covered cock is still full of energy. As the

liquid drips to the floor, Celia guides it into herself without hesitation, and once again our voices echo.

The night wears on.

Aegir Hardlett 20 years old – Wartime Mode

Squad

Eastern Independent Army: 500, Cavalry: 500

Normal Private Army: 200, Cavalry: 200

Bow Cavalry: 1000, Cavalry: 1000

Total: 1700

Subordinates: Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Celia (adjutant), Irijina (normal private army commander), Pipi (communication duties)

Current location: Treia kingdom (former Arkland), Central area, city of Valeora

Achievements: Defeated 5000 of Treia's royal army, fell several towns and villages, fell the center area's central city of Valeora

CHAPTER 75

TREIA CONFLICT ③

THE MASK OF THE CEASEFIRE NEGOTIATIONS

-Alexandro the First/ Third person POV-

Capital Goldonia

“This is clearly an act of invasion!”

The man’s voice was rough, but he wasn’t getting through to anybody around him. The man prattles on further.

“My country has come to believe that your country is friendly with us. With a result like this though, we’ll have to re-examine our relationship!”

The man has been dispatched from the kingdom of Treia and is stationed in Goldonia as the ambassador. At the moment, both countries still have friendly relationships with each other and both have stationed ambassadors in the other party’s respective country.

“I have heard many testimonies from the citizens and am aware of the clash at the border zone. However, a full-scale attack is now commencing from the Goldonian side and they have even invaded by stepping over into our territory – there is no longer any kind of excuse you can make!”

The ones currently in this place are the ambassador for Treia, the king of Goldonia, as well as the high officials of diplomatic and military affairs. In reality, it was a scenario where the ambassador came storming into the palace yelling.

“I understand what you are trying to say, and I also understand your anger. But we can’t talk about it when you yell like that. You should first sit in your seat, drink some tea and try to calm down.”

“That’s unnecessary. I am fine as I am right now.”

The ambassador remains standing upright and doesn't break his posture. He has his own anger as well, but has probably been ordered to display the resolute will of his home country. It may have been rash to think that he was really angry from the bottom of his heart just from his words.

The king tried to avoid being noticed as he sighed and looked towards Erich. The army commander, who is also looking at the ambassador, scrunches his face in disgust but tries not to get into his line of sight. The protests coming from the ambassador are starting to get old.

[The Treian army was sent to the border zone to suppress the rebellious farmers and a clash began.] [The Goldonian noble's army commenced their full-scale attack, defeated the Treian army and also went further to invade into their territory.]

The ambassador's complaints are only those two, but the situation is already changing. The army led by Lord Hardlett has already advanced to the central part of former Arkland and has control of the core city of the area. The difference between the king's information, who was notified directly by the concerned party, and the ambassador's information, gotten via Treia's royal palace, is showing.

Due to the Hardlett army's speedy invasion, the king's plans are somewhat forced to be adjusted. Normally, it was going to be said here that there is proof that the first ones to attack was the Treian army. It's hard to believe that Hardlett would lie. If he planned to lie and escape responsibility, then he wouldn't invade in the first place.

The following line had been planned to be pushed forward: Treia makes the pre-emptive strike, Hardlett retaliates and it turns into a fight, then he advances to the neighboring city in order to restore order to the border. Of course the Treian ambassador won't accept it so easily, but if it turns into a pointless argument, then our objective would be achieved. If things get resolved with both sides taking blame and ending in a draw due to both sides getting injured, then Goldonia won't suffer much losses, so I won't mind.

But Valeora, the city in which they occupied and contacted us from, is not the eastern area, but the central area. As expected, we can't say that they are trying to restore order to the border.

"If you get that heated, you won't be able to think straight. I would also like to think about this issue a little more carefully. Why don't we take a break for awhile?"

The king declares arbitrarily and gets up from his seat. The ambassador seems discouraged, but when he saw the other people around him leave the room, he finally took his seat and drained the tea from his cup.

The king, having left the room, heaved a large sigh in the adjacent room, where only his trusted retainers were.

“Hardlett has certainly made a mess.”

Kenneth, the foreign affairs minister also continues on.

“Throughout this day, the ambassador should also receive the news. But right now, it’s about that. It’s something that could make you die of anger.”

Kenneth also states that a letter, which sounds like a scream, came from the ambassador who is stationed in Treia’s capital, Trisnea.

“Erich, your predictions were wrong.”

“I am terribly sorry... Certainly, a marching speed of that extent could not be anticipated.”

Erich is still currently feeling somewhat troubled deep in his heart. Even if his entire army is composed of cavalry, it is still scary that he could arrive at Valeora in just three days. But the fact is, it has already happened and there is no use trying to argue about it.

“It seems like Lord Hardlett has stopped in Valeora and has assumed a defensive position. He will hold out until the large army comes so we can hold the negotiations for the ceasefire.”

The king turns his head to acknowledge Kenneth.

“I originally assumed that Treia was just an imaginary nation. To have them as an enemy is no problem at all... but it’s a little too soon.”

The king had planned for it to happen after the internal affairs of their country became more chaotic and after they appealed to the surrounding nations when they lost their

ability to rule. Then, Goldonia's army would be reinforced further and the difference in military power between Treia would widen.

"There have been frequent occurrences of farmers rebelling in their territory, but most of them have been roughly suppressed by force. Denying their governing power even at this point should make it tough for them to get the other countries to understand."

"I would hope so. As I thought, we should get them to ceasefire first. Fortunately for us, the losses suffered by Lord Hardlett are small and Treia has suffered large casualties. If we were to stop the war now, the chaos in Treia will spread even further, and we won't lose anything."

On the underside of the imperial council, firstly, the aggregate opinions of the ceasefire are presented. But the problem is how they could convince Treia.

"When Treia suffers the loss of Valeora, they will get even more stubborn and become less flexible in thinking. We have the advantage in the state of battle so they should accept the ceasefire, but there is a possibility that they might seek monetary compensations and the punishment of the responsible parties."

The king goes into deep thought. He had no intention of conceding to a future enemy and punishing an excellent military force in Lord Hardlett. And if possible, he wants to settle things without paying a single cent. Money wasn't the problem, but it is a matter of dignity as a nation.

"Erich, take the central army to the southern area on the pretense of conducting an exercise. Then Kenneth will continue the ceasefire negotiations with only the condition of the withdrawal of all troops."

The king would not trust incompetent beings who could not understand what he said. The retainers, who connected the pieces of the puzzle, lowered their heads.

A sharp sword is not only used to cut, just flashing it in front of their eyes will produce a sufficient effect.



-Aegir POV-

At the same time, Valeora

"I see, so they saw that we weren't a large army and they came forward at us with rushed preparations?"

"It hasn't been that many days since we've beat them so much already. The national army shouldn't be able to gather numbers like this. Maybe they mobilized the surrounding noble feudal lords?"

Leopolt and I who are lined up by the castle gate are analysing the enemy army who have been deployed in a fashion which seems to encircle the city. Their numbers are roughly 6000, so I guess we can say they have at least the numerical advantage.

"If it's a siege, I guess this amount makes sense."

"There aren't any walls or towers like in a castle here though."

Valeora is the central city of the area and all cities of former Arkland above a certain level have walls. But there is a large difference in the height and size, and being located in the central area of the nation where there aren't any enemies anywhere, it's hard to label the city walls as splendid even as flattery. It isn't something that could withstand an endless assault from a full-scale attack.

"Then would you like to withdraw? The enemy army is a hybrid, so they are unfit for quick movements."

The forces we have here are all cavalry, which aren't suitable for a defensive battle, but if we run away, they won't be able to catch us.

"No, Erich said that they would negotiate a ceasefire based on the previous information. It's not good to escape when they are in the middle of negotiations."

"Yes, it's a war that we started after all. It's better if we don't show weakness, is it?"

This is also considered to be an appeal to the royalty. Thinking about the future, I don't

want to start a war, run away and then have the royalty help me.

“Then will you fight them?”

“I guess. It would be great if we can rout them.”

We can't use our usual methods. Our abnormal formation composed entirely of cavalry has overwhelming mobility and speed but they are disadvantaged in siege warfare. If we want to fight with an advantage, we would have to attack at night, but it would be idiotic to charge head-on at an enemy who has three times the amount of forces that we do.

“Leopolt, when do you think they'll come attack us?”

“In that condition, it would take until sunset for them to set up their formation outside the city. If they don't have the courage to attack at night quickly right after they arrive, then they should be coming by tomorrow morning, along with the sunrise.”

“I think so too. They've come with our small numbers in mind. They have no reason to uselessly delay.”

Alright, we decided on our plan.

“In the morning, when the enemy comes at us, we will open the gates wide and go at them. If we rush at them before they can form their night formation, then we can rout them.”

The formations for a siege and for night warfare completely contradict each other. If they assume the fight will include arrows raining upon them from above, then the deployed soldiers will hold their shields up while they advance and will probably come at us with the siege weapon set up at the front. The long spearmen, the natural enemies of cavalry, will become the target for loosed arrows in a siege. They probably won't use them as vanguard. Considering the morale of the soldiers, even if the enemy is looking to destroy the gate, you can expect to shake them up a little if a large group of cavalry jumps out in front of them.

Leopolt goes into thinking for awhile though.

“That would be nice optimistically speaking. But that's not good enough.”

“ ..”

The way this guy spoke is really testing the limits of my patience.

“Pardon me. But there is a problem. The gates of this city are narrow, and the way they will be invading from..... will probably be from the west side, so it would take time to reinforce troops there and after giving the enemy time to respond, there is a danger of everyone getting defeated.”

It's true that the city walls are small and the gates aren't big. At best, only two horses can fit side-by-side and pass through, so getting over 1000 cavalry to pass through that gap is a difficult task. We won't make it in time if it's just before the enemy moves, but if we get through the gate just in time, then it would give the enemy time to respond.

“We can't get out using the gates in the other directions at the same time either?”

“It will be the same. It will take time for us to disperse and the enemy will have time to set up their defenses. So why not keep the basic idea the same while applying a little trick to it.”

“What are you going to do?”

Leopolt whispers to me.

What is he thinking? That's a big trick.



-Third person/ Treian army POV-

The Next Morning

“All troops start advancing! Place the large shields in front, and protect the battering ram.”

As the sun rises, the Treian army launches their attack. Even though there are several thousands of us, it's not like the city could be completely surrounded. At first, there

was an argument within our troops about whether to disperse our forces but we took the safer method and the right path of concentrating our attacks on the western gate.

The ones who were painfully defeated once are excessively afraid of a second defeat. Both countries are not completely in hostile relations with each other in the first place, so having a war with ceasefire as the premise, makes things quite restrictive. In order for the negotiations to proceed advantageously, we have to gain at least one victory. Even if we allow the Goldonian army to escape, it would certainly be a win if we can recapture the city.

“Longspear squad, spread out to the sides. They might come out from the other gates, so don’t let your guards down.”

It’s hard to think that they would immediately rush out of the gate that is packed with soldiers in front. If the cavalry were to sortie, there is a higher probability that they would come out from the other gates and attack our flanks. In the first place, cavalry units are disadvantaged in a siege, so it is common sense to bring them out in a night battle. That’s what the commander had determined.

Suddenly, a large amount of arrows came raining down on top of the Treian army, who is advancing with their shields in place.

“Don’t let go of your shields!”

“If you don’t want to die, don’t stop moving!”

The arrows scattered around as they were mostly off target or blocked by the shields. The only ones that were defeated were the few who were unlucky. Our archers can return fire immediately, but they couldn’t see any signs of the enemy.

“They aren’t on top of the wall?”

“Are they shooting over the wall...?”

The regular soldiers are looking at each other with doubtful expressions since the attack didn’t come from the top of the wall, which is the major advantage that the defensive side has. In any case, our absolute condition for victory is to destroy either the gate or the walls and invade the city. The others quicken their steps to reach the gate, even if it was only a little bit sooner.

Until finally, the vanguard reaches the gate. The shields are lined up in front of the gate and the battering ram is called forward. Valeora's city walls and its gates are certainly not that thick, but they weren't something you could possibly break just by using your regular hammer either.

"There aren't any stones thrown nor is oil pouring down from the top. Even the arrows are loosed randomly."

The soldiers are now up against the gate and starting their gradual attacks using the battering ram. It's not like they would send out their troops from this gate at this point in time, and there are no signs of movement from the other gates either.

Perhaps the main force of the Goldonian army has withdrawn already? If the gate is destroyed, the inside might be emptied out already. When such an atmosphere was beginning to float in the air, the battering ram reached the gate. Several soldiers gathered momentum and crashed it against the gate.

"Eh?"

"Huh?"

It seems like a voice or something could be heard.

With a single push, the gate fell with a clank.

"No way this is possible..."

Somehow or other, it is the actual gate. But it's like it has been removed once beforehand.

Astonished voices can be heard, but they are soon replaced by shrieks and shouts. The reason wasn't because the enemy appeared or because arrows and oil was being rained down.

The wall right in front of the Treian army, the wall that we were trying to breakthrough, the wall that we didn't even touch – that wall is crumbling down on top of those guys' head.

Armor and shields are of no use against the falling city walls composed of large boulders. The battering ram that crashed into the gate was crushed along with the soldiers and stones mercilessly rained down on the ones hastily running away as well. The tumbling rocks relentlessly made mincemeat out of the soldiers directly under them as well as the ones slightly ahead of them.

The collapse of the wall started directly above the gate and spread to the left and right in a domino effect.



-Aegir POV-

“As I thought, it’s a great trick, isn’t it?”

“? What are you referring to?”

I’m referring to the conversation we had. The strategy also had luck on its side and was spectacularly done.

Since yesterday, the foundation of the walls around the gate have been shaved off and stones have been removed from the inside, leaving the gate in an unstable condition. With those walls combined with the charge from the enemy, it would cause logs from the inside of the wall frame to be pushed out. By the way, the door was opened from the beginning. In addition, the braking parts were also removed, so even if the battering ram doesn’t hit the gate, a single push with a hand will cause it to fall inward.

The enemy eventually went to breakthrough and the gate collapsed at the perfect timing, so they were pretty confused, but it was originally planned for it to happen much sooner.

“I was scared that it wouldn’t fall over.”

“With that said, if it was made too unstable and collapsed before the enemy came, then it would be disastrous.”

Of course the objective is not to damage the enemy. Looking at the big picture, having a portion of the wall, which wasn’t even that tall, collapse on the enemy would not cause much damage at all.

Our objective is only to widen the once narrow gate. Having the gate actually collapse in front of our eyes caused a wide space to appear before us. In addition, the enemy who has pushed open the gate are now in chaos; this is truly what is called the blessing of the gods.

“Leopolt, remember the god you prayed to last, your prayers have been answered.”

“Unfortunately, that was during my childhood, so I do not have much memory of it.”

I point my spear to the front. Leopolt also draws his sword and gets into a stance with the sword above his head. Our entire squad has already finished gathering into a charging formation.

“The path has opened! All troops, charge! Trample over them!!”

Not long after the roar of the collapsing wall faded, the sound was replaced with the war cries of soldiers and the sound of galloping horses. In front of us are the confused and panicking Treian soldiers, making a commotion... they are like targets placed just for us. In front of the wide open space are several dozens of cavalry lined up with each other. The mass of cavalry jumps over corpses and stray rocks as they pounce forward.

“Overrun them!”

Because the collapse itself was small, the cloud of dust didn’t last long. The visibility clears and the archers released their arrows all at once. Unlike the random firing that happened earlier, this time they accurately shot to kill.

Screams resonated and the enemy soldiers fell down with clattering sounds, and at the same time the rain of arrows settled down, the long spearmen and the heavy cavalry which Leopolt is leading, charged in. Sounds of shouts and horseshoes intermingle in this hellish scene. Spears pierced through the backs of the retreating enemies and horseshoes trampled over those who fell. The escaping soldiers who split to their left and right were able to extend their lives, but behind them... if they got in the path of the advancing army, they were thoroughly hunted down.

“Uwaaaaaa!!”

“This is a nightmare!!”

Only a few among the enemy's vanguard were crushed flat under the crumbling wall. But those who did not get smashed have no idea what is going on.

With me leading the charge at the front, every time I swung my spear, an enemy's life disappeared. If the blade connects, they get bisected, if the handle hits them, they get flung away. Schwartz jumps over the tumbling large rock in front of me which might have been 2 metres high and landed on the head of the spearman who was hiding behind me. I don't remember how many people this horse has stepped on, but it was rare for him to step on them while they are upright.

"Advancee!!"

I raise a shout over the crushed enemy soldier. My subordinates continued shouting their war cries as the enemies ran away scared.

"Long spearmen on both sides! They are approaching us."

Celia, who ran beside me before I knew it, shouted. I see, they were wary of us coming out from the other gates and placed these guys on the left and right, away from the headquarters. As it is now, the last hope of protecting their headquarters is now out of their reach. The long spearmen are powerful but that long weapon will become an obstruction when they try to move quickly. They are not suited to move when there is a sudden change in situation either.

"Fire off arrows as you pass through them."

The bow cavalry loose their arrows sideways as the flustered soldiers try to run back to their headquarters. Their formation instantly collapses and they stop moving. This is enough.

These guys can no longer obstruct us from charging into their headquarters. The last barrier which protects their headquarters, the enemy archers, stand in our way, but the archers are not important in a siege. In other words, they were left behind by the majority of the troops who closed in on the gate and the rearguard, which got defeated instantly.

"Do not break formation! Their arrows amount to nothing."

The arrows descend upon us, and the light-armored bow cavalryman who got hit fell over. However, the amount of soldiers who fell were unbelievably few and it was way too late. Archers without the long spearmen to protect them cannot guard against cavalry. The horses close their distance to within bow range in no time and they only have one or two chances at best to loose their arrows. And when the distance is brought closer...

“Gyaaaaaa!!”

“Uwaaaa!!”

I take a large swing with my spear and several archers get blown away at once, while the slightly late bow cavalry thrust into battle with their swords drawn. The highest selling point of these guys are their horse archery skills but their swordsmanship on horseback is decent as well. Against the archers who allowed us to get close, it doesn't matter if they lag behind. Having encroached so close to the archers, they are nothing but victims of a massacre.

Once we penetrated the archers' lines, the appearance on the enemy's faces changed. A plain black and brown face was decorated with brilliant colors of red, white, yellow and blue

“This looks like the headquarters!”

I stab the wonderfully decorated spearman with my spear.

“Ogyaaa!!”

The cries he lets out are slightly different too.

“Let's search for the enemy commander.”

Celia threw a knife at the knight who charged in with his spear and he fell off his horse. He screamed something which sounded like 'coward', but when it was directed at Celia instead of me, I knew what kind of person he was. It got me in a bad mood so I had Schwartz step on him.

Well, now we look for the commander, but in a situation like this, how will the commander move? A brave commander will inspire his allies and try to recover. If he's

foolhardy, then he will come challenge me in a duel. If he's cowardly, he'll plan to leave his allies behind and run away. But more often than not, there are many commanding nobles who are of the latter type.

"Well, I thought that would be the case."

A short distance away from the battlefield – in other words right behind us in a straight line – a group of cavalry is seen running away. The one wearing the fancy armor should either be the commander or a high-ranking officer. If you were going to abandon your allies and run, it would have been safer if you just surrendered, and I think it wouldn't have been so unsightly.

"Pipi."

"Aye."

Pipi points an arrow straight up and releases it. A high-pitched zooming sound came from the processed arrow and the nearby subordinates all traced their eyes back to where the sound originated from – to the area I was at. I directed my spear in the direction that the escaping cavalry are located.

"Do it!"

Suddenly, over a hundred arrows poured down on the escaping group and all of them were dropped from their horses.



Several hours later

"Well now, are you the commander?"

"....."

I look at the bearded, important-looking, middle-aged man from across the table. The man has a bandage wrapped around his head, but it wasn't a serious injury. It seems he got cut after his horse flung him to the ground from being stabbed in the butt by an arrow.

“I won’t know if you keep quiet. If you want suitable treatment, then you will have to tell me on your own.”

I say that, but I have already heard from the others that he is the commander. I just want to hear it from his mouth to confirm what I already know.

“...That’s right. I seek to be treated with honor as a prisoner of war.”

“Most certainly, Count.”

I left the man surprised at the fact that I knew of his standing, as I exit the room.

“Treat him courteously.”

Saying that to one of the soldiers is the entirety of my thoughtfulness to him. I feel no particular respect for this man who left his own soldiers to escape. It’s not like I want him to respect me either.



“How was it?”

“It’s nothing much; he’s just the first stage... he’ll probably be kept here under arrest until the ceasefire. It won’t hurt.”

As Celia comes over to me when I exit the room, I pat her head as I speak. As soon as the arrows dropped the group of riders of the escaping cavalry, the battle was over. In most cases where the headquarters has fallen and the commander has been defeated, the fight will be finished. Most of the ones who accompanied this guy either died instantly, or had a fatal injury and was finished off, but this guy for some reason ended up uninjured.

After it was settled, there was no meaning to pursue the retreating soldiers so we let them escape, and in regards to the ones who surrendered, we had them disarmed and forced into a tent that we set up. A majority of the Treian soldiers were emaciated so we couldn’t really leave them alone, so I’ll assign some soldiers on lookout just in case.

“I would have preferred it if they just ran away all together, it would make things easier.”

I told the lookout that if they secretly run away, don't chase them.

"What an excellent victory. But the city wall collapsed."

That's correct, the outer city walls collapsed from the foundation so it cannot be repaired by us. But it collapsed outward so there is no damage to the city, and we were planning to withdraw in the first place, so it doesn't really matter. It may become the ruins of the signs of battle or something.

"Celia also did well."

"Yes!"

When I pet her head, she hugs me happily. My hand moves from her head to her face, and also from her breasts to her crotch.

"Regarding the future,"

"Hihi!"

"Hm?"

Leopolt calls out to me from behind. Celia jumps out and threatens in a way that seemed like her hair was standing on end, but Leopolt doesn't even glance at her.

"I think we should prepare for a smooth retreat so that we can do so whenever the ceasefire comes into effect."

Just as we witnessed, the Treian army is a hybrid army, composed of the royal army and the armies of the feudal lord nobles. From a glance, it took all they could just to squeeze out these troops, so for some time, there won't be another attack from them. Even I expect that there won't be any more battles as the ceasefire comes into effect.

"You're right. Prepare as we planned in the beginning, I'll leave it to you to handle the details."

"I understand. Then I will take my leave."

Leopolt leaves. Even though it's immediately after the end of the battle, this guy is quite busy. As soon as he leaves, Celia once again snuggles up against me.

"Umm..."

A voice calls out to me again. When I turn around, I see a female soldier from the bow cavalry unit. The mountain nation originally brought women out to battle as well. But their skills are not inferior to those of the men.

"In today's battle, I brought down eight people... I want a reward."

"That will be after we go back. I'll assess the value after I confirm whether your merits are real."

It seems like dissatisfaction has accumulated from the fact that I'm randomly giving out rewards. But the woman doesn't move.

"What I want isn't money... I want the chief's seed. This year, I'll be 20 years old so I want to bear strong children."

"Wha-?!"

Celia is surprised, and I also look up. The woman's physique is large but her breasts are lacking. But it might actually not be so bad for the both of us to let out our pent up sexual frustrations after the battle. I stand in front of the woman and forcefully steal her lips.

"Instead of it being a reward, it might be painful, you know?"

"It's fine, that is also a reward."

I pick up the woman and carry her to a random room, throwing her onto the sofa.

"Take everything off."

"Yes."

The woman threw aside her clothes without hesitation. She didn't seem to put much energy into it, so my mischievous heart is unconsciously budding.

“Spread your legs.”

“Yes.”

Her legs opened wide and her crotch is exposed. There was the smell of sweat that accumulated right after the battle. Even so, she isn't embarrassed?

“Spread open your vagina and show me the inside.”

“Like this?”

With her fingers, she spread it so that it was gaping open. It was a nice pink color but the embarrassment that I expected, couldn't be seen. It seems that the mountain nation believed that baby-making was something natural and didn't feel embarrassed about it.

I give up and also take my clothes off. I was also pent up after fighting so I actually didn't have much luxury to fool around either. I took everything off and was just about to penetrate her as I turned to face the bed, but the woman held her mouth and turned red.

“Wha-?! Wh-wh-wh-?!”

“What's wrong?”

I glanced at my body but there wasn't anything particularly there. Don't tell me that she's embarrassed at this point at my erect dick.

“B-biiigg!! To think it was this much so!”

“Huh?”

“Amazing! It's more than twice the size of the thing that I had my brother show me! Amazing! It's too amazing, chief!”

As if her earlier attitude was a lie, she edges closer to my crotch. Then she grabs my cock with both hands with an incredibly interested face and strokes it. Seeing that I realized her astonishment, she cleared her throat to come back to her senses and

return to her usual tone.

“For a man with such a big thing to exist... Wouldn't your clothes tear if you're wearing them while this thing is erect?”

It won't tear my clothes, but it's easy to tell when I'm turned on no matter what kind of clothes I wear, so that creates its own hardships.

“Are you really that curious about such a large cock?”

“Yeah! I heard from my brother, that a man with a large cock means that he also has a large capacity¹. Since the chief has such a humongous thing, he must be the greatest man alive.”

Is it some superstition the mountain nation have that can tell a person's capacity from the size of their dick?

“Is that something that is common amongst you guys?”

“Nope, my brother told me. My brother is knowledgeable after all.”

It looks like she adores her brother quite a bit.

“He also told me many more things regarding men.”

I have a bad feeling about this.

“He also taught me the method to care for a cock for when I get a husband in the future. You do it like this, right?”

She grabs my thing with both hands, drools over it and starts rubbing it slowly.

“My brother taught me this every day in the hopes that I will become a wonderful wife.”

I won't say anymore. Your brother was discreetly playing around with you.

“Well, I'm already prepared so I want you to pump your seed in me. You don't need to hold back, since my brother tore my hymen with his cock in advance so I won't be

troubled later when I become a wife. That way, I won't feel pain during the important times."

"....."

Remaining silent, I spread open her hole and push myself inside. The hole that was trained by her brother is narrow, but well-developed.

"Aah! As I thought, it's big! Aaa, it's painful but it feels good!"

I'll need to apologize to her brother, since I've stretched out the younger sister's hole quite a bit. Not to mention, she might go back to him as a pregnant woman.

"A child! Give me a strong child! Give me your seed!"

There are other factors too, but having her plead me to become pregnant while I'm in the middle of penetrating her is a good feeling. Since she's the first woman that I'm embracing, I hold back a little when moving my hips so as to not break her. It's a bit lonely that she doesn't have much for breasts, since when I try to bury my face, I hit her ribs.

"I feel strange, like something... is cominnngg!"

She twitches and throws her head back. Her brother probably made her quite sensitive.

"Hey you, it'll make a mark."

The girl was feeling agonizing pleasure and was biting her own hand pretty hard.

"If you're going to bite, then bite me."

"I'm sorry... then don't mind if I do."

Then the woman bit the nape of my neck instead of my shoulder. There are some who would bite on vital areas so I tried to stop her, but the feeling of her teeth sinking into my nape brought nostalgic memories back into my mind. My beloved Lucy is smiling as she teases me, kisses me, then pierces her fangs into me to suck my blood..... The pleasure that runs through me in that moment, as I feel her breath on my skin and the

stinging sensation of her teeth digging into my body...

“Ah-! Uwaaaaa! What is this?!”

My dick that was inside the girl pulsed and seemed to inflate. It's a pleasure that I can't even control, so I don't know how big it will get. I was going to pull out from the screaming woman, but it has swollen large enough that the tip gets caught inside her.

“Aah-! AAaahh—-!!”

As if my swelling cock would burst her insides, the girl agonized as she finally fainted. Urine slowly leaked out of her.

I also felt a sudden gush of pleasure as I couldn't hold back any longer. I forcefully pinch the breasts that she doesn't have and hold her down violently.

“Uooooo!!!”

An unbelievable groan comes out of me. Then my semen sprays out, making me think for an instant that it was urine that flowed out.

“Uoo! Guaaaa!”

My dick pulsed in a rhythm that made it possible to see her stomach move. And the sound of my seed firing out could also clearly be heard.

The girl's stomach quickly inflated but it still doesn't stop. I forcibly pull out of the loosened hole after she lost consciousness but my semen still comes out, splattering the sticky sperm all over the fainted girl's body.

As soon as my ejaculation stopped, my dick shrunk. It seems like just about everything came out after a single ejaculation. It was a release with quite the momentum so I could feel a dull pain in my balls.

The girl was leaking my seed on the sofa almost as if she was excreting from her crotch.

“What on earth was that?”

I look at the sleeping girl on the sofa once again, but it wasn't like she was particularly

pretty, and her tits weren't great. Her technique wasn't anything special, rather her skills don't even come close to the feet of Melissa.

"I guess it must be that..."

I rub my nape. This girl's playful biting must have coincidentally but accurately hit the place that Lucy sucks my blood from. During the time after I lost my virginity... when my sexual appetite was still growing, Lucy's blood sucking and the rich sex I had with her was the best pleasure. It seems that having my nape bitten revived that memory which has been carved into my soul.

"I unconsciously discovered a sexual fetish."

I chuckle to myself as I cover the girl with a blanket. With such an amount, she should be able to conceive a child. With such a large release, my lust has also calmed down. I'm feeling hungry too, so I should take a bath and eat something.



-Third person POV-

The girl who watched as the man left... Celia unexpectedly pops her head out. The man she loved brought another woman with him into the room so she secretly peeped as she pouts. If there was a chance, she was planning to join in as well, but there weren't any openings. However, there was a far greater result from this.

"Aegir-sama's erogenous zone comes from teeth hitting his nape..."

Her beloved man already has several women surrounding him; he already has a legal wife and concubines as well. But none of them should know about this information. The sharp eyes of this girl saw precisely where the teeth had dug into, and it wasn't something that she would forget. After that forceful ejaculation, the cock which was pulled out seemed unbelievably big, even to Celia, who has gotten quite familiar with his dick already.

Celia, who always acted tough in front of everyone besides her beloved person, relaxed her eyebrows and lips. It was a secret between just the two of them... there is nothing that sounds sweeter than that.

Aegir Hardlett 20 years old – Wartime Mode

Squad

Eastern Independent Army: 480, Cavalry: 480

Normal Private Army: 190, Cavalry: 190

Bow Cavalry: 980, Cavalry: 980

Total: 1650

Subordinates: Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Celia (adjutant), Irijina (normal private army commander), Pipi (communication duties)

Current location: Treia kingdom (former Arkland), Central area, city of Valeora

Achievements: Defeated 5000 of Treia's royal army, fell several towns and villages, fell the center area's central city of Valeora, complete annihilation of the Valeora defense/ Treia hybrid army

CHAPTER 76

CEASEFIRE NEGOTIATIONS

-Aegir POV-

"It hurts~ My stomach feels like it's gonna break..."

"It's alright, a woman is made for something like this. Don't worry about it and spread your legs."

I finally entered the woman in which I was one step away from doing and who was crying previously. The mark of her virginity has already been torn and the blood has stained the sheets. It seems like she's the second daughter of a merchant family in Trisnea and has gone out to work for a noble who gained territory in Valeora. Perhaps she was sent to deepen the relationships between the two families.

"A kiss..."

"Nnh."

She was a woman who ran away before, but I once again persuaded her carefully. Although she seems to feel the pain of losing her virginity, her insides had quite a lot of pleats and they undulated well – she has a good hole. She looked timid but her facial features were good, moreover if she was trained well, she could easily become a very attractive woman.

"Amazing kiss..."

She seems to be ignorant about sex so just from inserting my tongue into her mouth while I'm kissing her, causes blood to rush to her face. I move my hips as I tickle her sides and playfully poke her belly.

"Kya-! Nooo, it tickleess."

The woman twists her body around and laughs while my cock was still inside her. It seems that she's distracted from the pain of her deflowering and also from her

nervousness. If you take her virginity poorly, then she'll think men are scary. It's the man's duty to teach her the joys of sexual intercourse during her first time, so that she doesn't become scared later on.

If I take too long though, she might feel pain again. Thinking that I should ejaculate soon, I fixed my body to hers and strengthened the shaking of my hips.

"Ah!"

The woman seemed to understand what I was trying to do so she shuts her eyes and steeled herself. She endures the pain for a while and as I approach my climax I stick my face against her breasts and shove my penis deep into her interior.

"Guu"

"Hyaaaah!! It's flowing inside of mee!"

Shaking my waist, I continue to fire my second and third round after which I stopped moving my cock and pulled it out.

"That was good."

"Yes..."

Melissa once told me long ago that saying a simple word after the conduct was done, means a lot to the girl. The woman closes her eyes with a smile on her face, then she stares curiously at the semen spilling out of her spread legs.

"You must be tired, right? I don't mind if you just rest in bed like this."

This was a room in the mansion confiscated from a former noble, prepared by me in advance, so no one will interfere. It might be nice for her to think about the lingering memory of her loss for awhile.

Thinking that I would go grab some water to drink, I went out of the room and Celia was standing in front of the door.

"What's wrong? Did you want to peek?"

“That’s not it! A report arrived, but because it wasn’t that urgent, I waited until you were finished.”

She seems fairly composed. In the past, she would have made up some reason just to burst in and threaten the girl.

“This is a report about the confiscated goods. The captured items have been loaded and things are progressing well.”

“Is that directly from Leopolt?”

“That’s right. Is there something wrong?”

“No, it’s fine.”

After defeating the enemies which came to Valeora, there were no more enemies in the vicinity. Although with that said, it’s not like we could go around plundering the nearby villages if we consider the ceasefire negotiations. Until the King reaches a conclusion, there is nothing for us to do.

“What should we do about the wall? I think that it may leave us too defenseless, so shall we get people to repair it a little?”

The walls on the west side around the gate have collapsed completely and both bandits and mercenaries can go in and out as they please.

“No, bandits won’t come attack us, and we aren’t ruling over this city, so just leave it.”

“I understand. Even so, this is an incredible amount of carriages.”

On the main street of the city, there are large amounts of carriages lined up in various sizes ranging from the large four-horse carriages to the ones that donkeys pull.

“The owner has already been compensated. The Treian army’s goods were plundered after all.”

“Are you planning to bring back the equipment of several thousand people?”

“If it’s possible.”

Normally, it would be natural to throw away the equipment of the feudal lord's soldiers because they were heavy, but the armor and helmet that these noblemen and knights wear were much more expensive than some botchy jewelry.

She seemed to be thinking deeply and seemed cute so I rubbed her cheeks.

“Waah! Stop stop!”

“I will leave these matters to Leopolt. You don't have to worry about it.”

“I understand so please stop pulling on my cheeks!!”

The one who started this conflict was me, so obviously all the expenses should come from me personally. Even though we've managed to obtain successive victories, casualties have also appeared. It takes quite a lot of money to mobilize an army as well. I was able to help them get some actual experience in battle but since it ended so quickly, it wasn't really worth it. If the equipments which were abandoned or disarmed from the enemy army are brought back, it could be reused or just sold off for money. If possible, I would like to get the ransom for the important-looking men, but maybe it'll be prevented by the ceasefire conditions.

Moreover, this town had a feudal lord and there seemed to be houses where the aristocrats lived and also affluent merchants. There are many things left here, so I think it would be fine to take them. Leaving the citizen's behind, they immediately escaped for their own lives. Therefore, I think it's fine for them to lose this much as compensation. This has unexpectedly become quite a good expedition for my profits.



-Third Person POV-

Capital, Goldonia

“For the above reasons, even if we put aside the attack at the start of the war, it is clear that the Goldonian side made an excessive attack. Thus, the ceasefire will require compensation for the loss and the repairing of the border line and...”

Count Verdot has a strict face while pleading to King Alexandro.

In addition to the fall of Valeora, their army also got destroyed in their attempt to recapture the city, so the Treian government decided that it would no longer be possible to solve things except by negotiating through the ambassador. After the war in Arkland, they also managed to take the upper hand from Goldonia in negotiating for dominion of territory and Count Verdor who spoke in a loud voice about his warm personal relationship with the King made him the first choice to act as an ambassador.

At first, he denied the role, but because he was pressed on by the high society due to his big mouth which spread heroic tales about himself, he was forced into the position of special envoy and sent towards Goldonia.

“Well, isn’t that a strange argument. If our country does not have the responsibility for starting the war, why would there be a need for us to make compensation?”

“However, currently great damage has been caused. If you don’t compensate for the damage that your country has caused...”

“My country and your country has favorable relations, so the incident that happened this time only appears to me as an unfortunate accident between my retainer and your country. Or is it that my retainer... Viscount Hardlett, has committed some unjust act that opposes your sense of morality?”

“I am not quite aware of that...”

“Rather, according to the information I gained, it seems to me that your army massacred the escaping citizens and on top of that, aimed their arrows towards my army and fired shots.”

Verdor looks away. That was exactly the case, but he would not admit it even if his mouth was ripped open, although it’s quite an unsightly result.

“That is nothing but the thoughtless words of insurgents. That’s not what really happened...”

The King slams the desk... or you would think he would, instead he forcefully rested his teacup on the desk.

“We received the pre-emptive strike and further, you have stepped deeply into our

territory... if this is in fact a war between enemy nations, then the one who needs to pay compensations is your country, isn't it? But I have said that I would withdraw my troops unconditionally. I'll have my troops back to the border line and we'll both forget this happened. Isn't that the best outcome?"

But Verdot doesn't agree to those conditions. The things lost in the war between the Treian kingdom and the Hardlett army is too big. The army defeated on the border suffered significant casualties, and the army which attempted to retake Valeora has been destroyed and many have surrendered, and even now the exact amount of casualties is unknown.

The accumulated total number of troops which have been destroyed exceeds 10,000. The amount of equipment they lost was huge too, and the supplies stolen from the crushed supply squads were also a ridiculously large amount. The supplies have already been running low due to the sudden price increase of grain and the frequent occurrences of rebellion inside the occupied land. At this point, if they are unable to gain reparations, the government would be dealt a big blow.

More than anything, instead of losing against the Goldonian royal army, the Treian army lost twice to some feudal lord in the remote regions. Getting nothing in return for making peace will cause the royalty to completely lose face. This situation is seriously not good since right now in the former Arkland territory, they have their hands full trying to suppress the frequent rebellions of farmers.

Verdot had hopes that the Goldonian King would not prove to be a tough negotiating opponent as he was in the rumors. It was also like this in the previous negotiation. If he won't make any mistakes, there is no choice but to continuously pressure him.

"If you won't accept paying the compensation, then unfortunately, I can't agree to the ceasefire so soon. Lord Hardlett is already quite deep into my territory, so it might end with him and his army meeting an unfortunate fate, you know?"

That was a bluff. As soon as they failed in capturing Valeora, there is no longer any capable armies in the area. The main force of the royal army is in the vicinity of the capital Trisnea, and even if the armies of the lords are gathered, the surrounding feudal lords wouldn't challenge the powerful army of Hardlett who has already won twice with his small amount of forces.

"I don't desire a war with your country."

Relief appears on Verdot's face.

"But, there are many wars that occur even when unwanted by both sides."

His face stiffens.

"I don't need to know whether or not you are going to annihilate some people. But those actions will cause me displeasure."

The King opens the window while speaking and overlooks the entire capital.

"Goldonia is a great country. And a suitable army has been gathered too."

"...What do you mean by that?"

The King looks back at him. He was smiling, but his gaze does not leave Verdot's eyes.

"It has nothing to do with this incident, but I'm having my army get stronger by letting them conduct training exercises."

Now that it was mentioned, Verdot realizes that the number of soldiers in the garrison got fewer.

"There is a perfect place to hold the exercises in the southern territory. It's a large exercise conducted with 30,000 troops, which I would wish for them to succeed by all means."

Verdot's face starts to lose color as the blood drains from his face. A large army of 30,000 is heading to the south. He hasn't gotten stupid enough from the peaceful times to think that this would be just an ordinary exercise at this point in time.

Even just the rebellious farmers and the invasion of Hardlett's army is causing enough of a ruckus, so thinking about what would happen if 30,000 of Goldonia's legitimate army also collides into them is a frightening thing.

"Surely you jest... with such a demonstration, you will invite the isolation of your nation. As much as Goldonia is a large country, it can't stand up against four opposing countries at the same time."

“It’s just a training exercise. But if we are talking about hypotheses here...”

The King smiles. It was an aggressive smile, without an iota of calmness or friendship.

“At that time, it would only be three nations. If they have already been killed, will the punishments I receive from those offenders be important?”

Both of them no longer utters a single word. The King has no need to say anything more and Verdot couldn’t reply anything with either. It is quite obvious that Triea can not currently bear any kind of full-scale attack from Goldonia. Even if Goldonia were to receive armed sanctions from the surrounding countries, Triea certainly will not be in the picture by then.

The silence continues even as the King slowly finishes enjoying his second helping of tea, as the sound of him softly placing his cup down resonates.

“Count Verdot, it’s a ceasefire. Let us both suppress our swords and return home. What do you say?”

Verdot is the special envoy entrusted with the full authority, and as soon as he disappointedly nods his head, both countries agreed mutually to enter into a ceasefire. The conditions were to immediately withdraw to the previous border line, release all prisoners of war, and both sides will not question who the responsibility of the war falls on. In addition, to prevent clashes at the border zone, it was decided that an area acting as a buffer zone will be created.

Verdot was able to thoroughly taste the terror of the man called King Alexandro. Who said that this King was sweeter than his reputation? If there are benefits to be gained, this King is willing to get involved in wars all over the land on these plains. However, the biggest concern for Verdot right now is how he will be treated after he brings this information back to his home country.



-Aegir POV-

One week later, Valeora

"It looks like a ceasefire."

"I see."

"Is that so?"

"The war is over?!"

"Cease Fire???"

The people gathered in this place are me, Leopolt, Celia, Irijina and Pipi. No one seems to be surprised. It was a result already predicted, and we formed our plans around that assumption.

"What are the terms?"

"Unconditional and instantaneous withdrawal of troops, and the release of all prisoners of war. That's it."

"Hoh, it seems the King has come out superior in the negotiations."

"I guess, but Leopolt, you shouldn't address the King so casually."

"I won't say it in front of his presence."

"In any case, since the ceasefire has been determined, we don't need to overstay, so let's take what we need and quickly get back home."

"We're just like a group of bandits."

Celia jokes around.

"If we were real bandits, then we would also take the women."

“...Then aren't you a bandit? You not only ate that girl, you also ate those two maids, didn't you?”

She's paying attention. I certainly enjoyed a maid with large breasts and a middle-aged maid. Of course, I didn't do anything by force.

“Leopolt, the plundered items... and the loot, have they been loaded yet?”

One of the ceasefire conditions is that responsibility of war will not be questioned by either party. In that case, we don't have to return the goods that we plundered during the conflict.

“Yes, there are no delays. Roughly everything which has some value, especially armor and weapons, are piled up in mountains. As expected, we couldn't fit everything so a portion will be left behind.”

“I don't mind. When we leave, bandits may come, so it's fine to leave a little bit.”

It's because we destroyed the walls protecting the city. It would make me feel bad if I let the bandits rape the nice women in this city as they please.

“If the soldiers want to bring it back, let them bring what they want.”

Of course, I can't let them do as they pleased with the equipment, but if they were to sell it, it would act as a nice extra income for them. Since individual plundering is somewhat forbidden, if I don't give them some sort of reward, then their morale won't improve.

“With weapons aside, we're bringing back things like gold and jewels, right?”

The conversation is getting more and more similar to that of a bandit.

“We are prioritizing those when packing. To prevent them from being stolen, there is a record which lists the items.”

I tell him I don't need to see it, but Celia takes it anyway and gives it a read. She's really an earnest girl.

“If preparations are ready, then why don’t we withdraw tomorrow. There’s no reason to stay.”

“““Yessir!”“““

“Aye.”

It hasn’t even been two years since I’ve lived in Goldonia, but how many wars does this make? Not to mention, it looks like more wars will come. It would seem that my life is intricately intertwined with both battles and wars.

I watch as my subordinates quickly leave the room to make final checks on the preparations and give out orders to the soldiers, then I head to the bedroom. Once I gave out the order, there’s nothing else for me to do. They are skilled, so they are already doing everything quite well.

“Are you heading to bed? Then shall I bring the sheets... kyaah!!”

In the corridor, I hug and lift the middle-aged maid by the sides, thrust my hand into her crotch and lower her underwear. I expose her ass and bring the flustered woman all the way to the bedroom.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 300. Mountain Nation: Approx. 1000

Assets: 2000 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear.

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest).

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Catherine, Antonio (son), Miti, Alma, Kroll.

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7.

CHAPTER 77

THE TWO BLESSINGS

-Aegir POV-

The city of Rafen was wrapped in an uneasy and unsettling atmosphere. The cause is the large army of returning cavalry and the tremendous amount of spoils of war that was brought back.

"It's almost like a migration of an entire nation. Aren't there like 100 carriages?"

"There are 15 of the large type and 75 that are medium type and under, but 20 out of those contain water and fodder."

Celia does well to remember minute details such as this. It's impressive, but she might be paying too much attention unnecessarily. If you get distracted by the little things and you miss seeing the big picture, that won't be good.

"Haau-! Don't stretch my cheeks when I'm telling you something serious!"



"You did well to come back unharmed, there has not been any particular changes within the territory.... Although, you've once again brought back such a large amount."

Adolph, who came galloping on a small donkey-like horse, also seems to be dumbfounded. Well, that's because we brought back thousands of swords, spears and anything worth their weight. Besides that, there are also expensive-looking armors and bows which could help us reform a whole army.

"Well this is... as expected, there's no place for you to leave this."

"We will be selling most of these. There are few valuables, so just store the spears and regular armors in some empty space and cover it with a cloak or something, and we'll bring the jewellery and gold back to the mansion."

“What on earth have you been doing? Don’t tell me...”

Adolph has a doubtful tone in his voice. I’ve done almost exactly what he has imagined probably.

“I just took the things the nobles and businessmen have left behind. Don’t worry, since I didn’t take anything from the regular citizens.”

“Please do things more moderately, I beg you...”

Adolph lets out a worrisome voice as he brings several people with him to count the spoils of war. He probably wants to create an accurate inventory list. He wants to create a summary of the people, the land, the assets and document them altogether.

Celia is doing something similar, but she leaves out some crucial steps. On the other hand, Adolph makes absolutely no mistake and doesn’t leave anything out. He is very talented but it’s more impressive that he doesn’t get depressed by doing such detailed and troublesome tasks. Maybe I should bring him with me to have fun with some women.

While thinking about what kind of woman he would like, I leave Leopolt to deal with the general affairs of the returning squad, and bring Celia and Irijina back to the mansion. Pipi is sticking by my side too.

It wasn’t that long of an expedition, but I want to embrace the women I’ve left at the mansion with reckless abandon. I want to be wrapped by the monstrous tits of Nonna, have Carla service me, and it would be nice if Mel can still squirt breast milk... While I’m at it, I’ll slap Rita’s ass too. My chest and crotch are both throbbing in anticipation as I open the door, witnessing a strange scene in front of me.

““Welcome back!”“

Carla and Mel jump forward and kiss me. If I look carefully, they are wearing matching loose one piece dresses. The length is long, but if I roll it up, it looks like I can penetrate them easily. Rita, as well as the sisters Kuu and Ruu, came later to greet me too. This much is fine but...

“.....”

Nonna is slumped over on her knees and her shoulders are drooped.

“What’s wrong?”

“...uuuuu, please ask the two of them.”

When I went to the two of them, Carla and Mel were full of smiles, holding each other’s hands and speaking in unison.

““The two of us, got pregnant!”“

“Eeeeeeeeeeeeh!?”

The only one who let out such a surprised voice was Celia. I let out so much semen inside them when I embraced the two of them that it knocked them up. It would be stranger if they didn’t get pregnant.

“Is that so? That’s good. Come here.”

I hug the two of them close to me and stroke their heads. Both of them are older than me, especially Mel, who is 17 years above me in age, but she’s still my cute girl.

“Ehehe, I suddenly didn’t feel too good. I thought it was some sort of illness, but Mel was also feeling the same way.”

“We had a doctor look at it as well, so there is no mistaking it.”

Carla is begging me to praise her, while Mel takes my hand and places it on her belly to stroke. It might still be too soon so I can’t tell when I touch her, but knowing that my kid is in there makes me feel a strange sensation.

“I don’t know what I should do... should I let you rest?”

In any case, I have no clue about parenting.

“Ufufu, you don’t have to worry, since bearing the child is a woman’s job. It’s fine if you treat us as you have always done before. I’m not bragging, but I have already bore three children, so I can also give some advice to Carla-san. Please be at ease.”

Having a veteran pregnant woman like Mel around reassures me. If it was just Carla, then it would cause me to worry.

“I won’t be climbing up any roofs anymore. It’ll freeze my belly if I go outside to pee, so I’ll refrain from doing that too.”

You shouldn’t be doing those things in the beginning. So she’s been doing that kind of stuff outside all this time...?

“Mel, if Carla does anything strange, don’t be afraid to scold her. Carla should also listen to what Mel says.”

“Yees~. It’s Aegir’s child after all. I will cherish it.”

“I understand. It should take around the same time, so we should bear strong children together.”

Rita, Kuu, Ruu, and Sue, who started to walk, appeared and are having fun excitedly, surrounding the two of them. Celia, who recovered from the shock, is now carefully touching the belly, as if touching something fragile. Irijina was told to definitely not be too forceful, so just in case, she is using just a fingertip to tap repeatedly. The two’s stomachs aren’t that different in terms of appearance, but Celia and Irijina are extremely interested in the life existing inside. Within this harmonious atmosphere, there is one woman who is carrying a gloomy aura.

“Don’t worry too much about it. This is a long awaited time, why not celebrate?”

“Of course, I’ll give them my blessings. But it’s not that – maybe my own womb is telling me that it hates me that it can’t get pregnant, and it’s such a pathetic feeling...”

In actuality, Nonna, having claimed that she herself is the legal wife, is a little conscious of the fact that even after I have embraced her so much, she is the only one who didn’t get pregnant.

“That kind of thing happens too. You’re only 19 now, right? From now on, I will continue to embrace you without hesitation and you’ll get pregnant somewhere during that time.”

“But if a boy is born first!!..... well, one has already been born, right? I guess it might

not make sense that I'm in such a hurry."

Nonna buries her face into my chest and whispers a soft thank you. I don't know what she's thanking me for, but I guess I'll hug her for now.

"Aaah-!! Nonna is doing it!"

Carla's loud voice broke our quiet time together.

"I am not! Aren't we just hugging each other?"

"Then what about that hand?!"

Before I knew it, Nonna's hand was rubbing my crotch.

"That is, well his precious thing has gotten excited, so I thought... you know."

Having Nonna hug me is equivalent to her pressing her breasts against me. My cock that came back from the battlefield is basically declaring that it is already lusting for women.

"We're going to be doing it for real now, so it should be fine."

But I can't fuck the pregnant girls.

"I don't think I could penetrate you, but you could use your mouth and hands. Your bellies don't really stand out yet either, so that shouldn't dampen your moods, right?"

Mel and Carla haven't done it in a while so they may be craving for it.

"Then let's go take a bath. Rita, you come too, I'll make love to you."

"Thank you very much."

I'll have to be affectionate with all the women in the house who had to wait. Having rich sex is the secret to maintaining good relationships with women.

"Well then, Irijina-san. Shall we wash our bodies in a separate place?"

“I guess. We can’t get in the way, oh wait! But can the two of us fool around and comfort each other!?”

“No, we won’t!! Let’s at least go somewhere Aegir-sama is not!!”

They seem to be having their own fun over there.



The bathroom in the feudal lord’s mansion in Rafen was hastily made, and was narrower and more poor-looking than the one we initially in the capital, but it has been gradually renovated and has gotten bigger. It might already be better than the one in the capital now. In any case, this is my territory so I can do as I like.

“It got bigger again, didn’t it.”

“Yes, the one at the capital was big too, but as expected, it couldn’t fit everyone together in the water.”

As soon as we entered the bathroom, Mel, Carla, Nonna, Rita and I poured water on ourselves and washed our bodies. Nonna and Rita washed their own bodies by using a soapy cloth to thoroughly wipe themselves, then used their bodies full of bubbles to press against me and wash me as well. It’s not good for Carla and Mel to press against their stomachs, so Mel sucked on my lips while Carla sucked on my dick.

“Hardlett-sama doesn’t have to do anything. We will do everything for you after all.”

“When it has been awhile, it really feels thick, it doesn’t fit in my mouth. Uwaa, your balls are heavy-! You’ve accumulated a lot, haven’t you?”

“Aegir-sama, you better not cum yet. You’ll save up lots and then release that thick juice inside me....”

After the women finished washing my body, even going as far as cleaning my asshole, they lead me to the bathtub. With the temperature of summer in mind, even bathing a long time in the warm water won’t cause the temperature to rise that much.

As I enter the bathtub, I hug Nonna from behind as we sink together into the water.

“I’ll have to first pound you with all of my accumulated sperm.”

“I’m happy.”

Nonna sits on top of me while I am crossed-legged and wiggles around, trying to adjust her own position to match that of my dick. Once she was satisfied, she grabs my cock and inserts it inside her by herself.

“Aaah... it’s been so long since I’ve had Aegir-sama inside me.....”

Once it entered her deepest part, I waited ten seconds to fully taste the pleasure, then slowly started to move. Along with our movements, the water sloshed around and made splashing sounds.

“It feels quite slippery. Have you been longing for it?”

“Yes, I have been longing for this sinful cock... you probably lusted for several women on the battlefield, right?”

Just a few people.

“Right now, this meat rod is yours. Savor it as much as you want.”

“I will! You can touch my breasts too...”

“We will do it.”

Carla cuts into the conversation and sucks on Nonna’s breast. Mel also smiles as she sucks on the other breast.

“Hey wait! What are you two-!? Aa~ don’t! Don’t suck on my nipples!!”

I can also clearly hear the sucking sounds coming from them. They weren’t just putting their mouths on them, but were genuinely trying to suck something out. Nonna is trying to separate them from her nipples so I restrain both her hands.

“Aegir-sama! Whyy?! Aaah, Carla don’t bite meee!!!”

It would be a waste to let an interesting moment like this end.

“They’re really big, aren’t they...? If something this monstrous exists, then it makes us look flat! We’ll have to get rid of the monsters!”

Carla grabs the nipple and pulls on it. Nonna throws her head backwards and screams. I would reproach them for being too violent, but they weren’t being too forceful, and the tightening sensation is quite nice.

“Even though the breasts are so big, the nipples are this cute... But their color is a little dark though. Take this-♪”

“Don’t talk about the color! I really... aaaaaaaah-!! Mel-san bit me! Stop it!!”

Mel grazes her nipple with her teeth. It made Nonna raise her hips and moan loudly.

“Mel, don’t hurt her too much.”

“Sorry about that.♪”

I didn’t think they were being serious, but teeth marks were left on Nonna’s nipple. Mel appears to be gentle on the outside but she has a rather merciless manner of doing things.

After that, Carla and Mel, the pregnant concubines, continued their thorough group attack on the defenseless Nonna, making her completely exhausted.

“Nonna? You two really overdid it. She’s dead-tired now.”

““Sorrry~”“

I don’t hear any feeling of remorse from these two. However, now that her body is completely relaxed, the mouth deep inside her body might open up easier. If I’m lucky, I might be able to grant her wish. I grab the large breasts of the continuously teased woman and thrust my hips up into her.

“Nonna! Get pregnant!!”

I thrust up into Nonna, lifting her exhausted body above the water surface and ejaculate. Maybe soaking in the warm water made things better, but I can tell that a

thick, almost solid, stream of semen flowed into her from my dick.

“Aah-... it’s coming out.”

The force of the ejaculation brought Nonna to her senses and she places her hand on her stomach happily.

“Mel, go on and feel it. You can tell that it’s shooting out.”

“Ara, you’re right. I wonder how long it’ll continue.”

The two concubines are making a fuss around the area where I’m connected with Nonna, the part that couldn’t fit inside and was above the water surface. With such a stimulus, a large amount of semen was further sprayed out.

“Nonna~ can you tell? It’s making squirting sounds as it flows into you. You’ll be like us quite soon, I’m sure.”

“With such a huge amount of seeds, the egg inside Nonna-san must currently be getting scrambled.”

While staring at the part we are connected and listening to the dirty talk, Nonna trembles.

Eventually the long ejaculation finished as I lowered my waist and let Nonna sink back into the water.

“Fuu, that felt good. How about you?”

“It was the best... I received a lot too.”

My dick is pulled out from her, but it would be a waste for the semen to flow back out, so Nonna holds it in as she gets up from the water. Well, time for the next person.

“Rita, you want some too, right? I’ll embrace you now, so come over here.”

Outside the bathtub, Rita was desperately rubbing herself, as she waddles over and shakes her prided ass towards me while lowering it on top of my waist. With such a large ass on top of it, my cock once again regained its strength.



“Which do you prefer, alcohol or fruit juice?”

“There’s meat as well.”

After getting out of the bath, me and the wives are relaxing on the sofa, while enjoying the drinks that Kuu and Ruu prepared. Normally, Sebastian and Rita would do that, but the butler is busy preparing for tonight’s triumphant celebration and Rita was groaning in the bathroom while waving her ass. Maybe I overdid it a little.

“Hardlett-sama, is it a good time?”

Adolph came when I was enjoying my drinks with my wives in both arms. Adolph places a sheet of paper on the desk while dripping cold sweat in the face of Nonna, who’s rolling her eyes, Carla who clicked her tongue, and Mel’s smile.

“And this is?”

“It’s the list of the spoils of war that I made earlier. I don’t know the value of the armor, weapons and jewels so just the amount is listed, while the amount of gold is accurately counted.”

“Hooh, you did well to count it in such a short time.”

“Even though it was just a short period... we returned just before noon and now the sun has already set.”

So we’ve been doing it that long, no wonder Rita, who’s supposed to be resilient, was turned into that state.

“The weapons can be used to some degree by the private army, but I plan to sell all the jewels and valuables of that sort and turn it into gold. Do you know of any merchants who would buy it from us?”

“With this amount, it would be impossible for the merchants in Rafen, comparable to miscellaneous goods shops, to buy it. There are many capable wealthy merchants in the capital of Goldonia though... Would that be alright with you?”

“Hm? If you think about it normally, I think that there is no choice but to sell it at the capital though.”

“I wouldn’t recommend it. It goes without saying that the wealthy merchants in the capital have an intimate relationship with the royalty. The items we have were plundered, right? So if the royalty found out about that detail from the merchants, it would only place an unwanted burden on us.”

I see, it is certainly the case that they won’t praise us for stealing from Treia, a nation of friendly relations, no matter how negligible that may be. Besides, if it happens to be worth lots of money, there may be some sort of tax. The civil officials in the capital are constantly aiming for the opportunity to tax the noble feudal lords after all.

“It won’t be blamed publicly and it isn’t widely talked about, don’t we have such an option?”

Adolph mulls it over in his heart. When the war is over and it becomes peaceful, his existence suddenly increases in importance.

“Maybe Magrado or Stura...? Preferably the latter. That country right now is developing commercially, and there are also many big merchants of which we are seeking. In addition, many of their merchants are not under influence of the nation, so that is convenient.”

“Stura?... That’s across the river, isn’t it? Are they going to take the trouble of coming over?”

“The merchants will go wherever they smell gold. Moreover, selling off our items to a third-party country, they will even take things which belonged to the Treia kingdom, so we can sell them confidently.”

“It’s fine if you say so. If we can sell them for a lot of money, then it doesn’t matter where we sell it.”

“That will depend on the negotiating. Unfortunately, jewels and works of art are outside my specialty so I can’t assess their value. It would be nice if we can somehow hide that weakness during the negotiation.”

“.....”

Nonna's eyes sparkle.

"Nonna, you can't go."

The proof that her eyes can't really be trusted lies in the several counterfeit items scattered in our house. Even if you puff your cheeks, you can't.

"If we don't have an address, then it doesn't matter what we say. Let's just do as much as we can. I'll leave the choice of merchant to you."

"I understand. Then I will give you just the list of gold."

The record shows various details of the currency and totals of 4000 gold is written.

"I see..."

It wasn't as much as I thought. It is a large amount, but it took close to 3000 gold in expenses to mobilize the army in the first place. The merchants properly took their cash and ran away with their fortunes. We can expect the nobles to bring expensive-looking armor and jewels from their families.

"This conflict has become a valuable experience for us. I came up with some new tactics too, and we didn't have any deficits so it is quite the successful result."

Leopolt came by and spoke up before I noticed. Seeing as how mercantilism and stuff were outside his field of expertise, he didn't speak up. It is helpful that my subordinates understand their own areas of specialty. Their personalities are strong to begin with, so if their sphere of subjects overlapped, then there would be constant conflicts everyday.

"I guess. There are more soldiers among the citizens too. Please tell Irijina to incorporate them into the private army. The size of the private army will increase and cooperation will improve too."

"Yes, the eastern army will eventually be returned to the king. The main focus of the new tactics will be to combine the private army with the bow cavalry."

"I'm counting on you."

After saying that, Leopolt left.

Now that there are no distractions, I can hold women left and right.

“Will you service me? I want to enjoy myself while I can.”

I’ll have to head over to the capital as soon as I rest my body. The king has not particularly called me, but a letter from Erich told me to come quickly, and it was written in a strong tone.

I sighed as he probably just has something to complain about. I hold down Mel’s head as she sucks my meat rod and I shoot my semen in her mouth.

“Aegir-sama’s seed is in my womb and in my stomach...”

She brings both hands to her stomach in ecstasy and as soon as Mel removes her mouth, Carla opens hers. Nonna also looks like she wants to service me with her mouth, so I had her use my finger. I’ll have to embrace these women as much as I can now.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 1950

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 300. Mountain Nation: Approx. 1000

Assets: 6000 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Catherine, Antonio (son), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 78

THE LILY FLOWER

-Aegir POV-

Capital Goldonia

“Lord Hardlett, how nice of you to come. It has been a while... since the Arkland war victory ceremony.”

“Yes, your majesty. In regards to the current incident, I apologize for bothering your majesty into dirtying your own hands.”

I lower my head in front of the King. As soon as I arrived at the capital, Erich appeared and took me along to see the King. I was planning to go after I’ve had fun with Melissa and the others though.

“It’s nothing, I just pretended a little to mobilize the army. The planned training exercise has already been halted. There has been absolutely no loss.”

Oh really, then there’s no problem. I could have gone one round with the girls then. Erich glares at me.

“So, how much damage have you suffered? Did you have any hindrances in your maintenance of security or border defense?”

There are no problems in those respects. Damage has been quite insignificant, and there were many among the rebelling farmers that are experienced in military campaigns, so conversely, the private army has been strengthened.

“No. Damage was quite minimal. There is no particular need to replenish any soldiers.”

“Hooh, I have received the reports that you’ve fought twice against an opponent with several thousand forces... But to suffer only minimal casualties despite that?”

“That is the case.”

The first battle was a total surprise attack, while the second was a massive charge after scaring the enemy out of their wits. We created situations where we were at an overwhelming advantage before attacking, so we suffered almost no casualties. Not only that, we were able to instantly invade into the central area, in large part due to the enemy not having their defenses set up.

“Is that so? As expected of the army led by my kingdom’s strongest brave general, how powerful.”

“I am not worthy of your majesty’s praise.”

I don’t see any particularly angry or unpleasant emotions from the King. Then, it means there isn’t much meaning to my apology.

“...But, this time’s incident has thrown many of my plans out of control.”

The King’s voice instantly got colder. As I thought, he’s mad, so I hope he doesn’t have some weird expectations for me. With a wave of the King’s hand, a portion of people excluding the civil officials and military officials all leave the room.

“What I’m going to say from this point on cannot be heard by anyone else.... I have secretly presumed Treia to be our next enemy. Therefore, when the time comes, I will neglect our temporary friendly relations with them.”

That reminds me, I think Leopolt mentioned something like Treia would be the next enemy. But if I just go, ‘Oh, I see’ then it might make the King mad so I’ll exaggerate a little and act surprised.

“Treia was careless this time around and the surrounding countries are beginning to be cautious about us. It has become a little annoying.”

After the ceasefire, it seems like the Treian guards are being removed from the border line, which had been neglected up until now. It means that even if the opportunity comes for them to pounce, they can’t instantly take control.

“Among the civil officials, there are some who voiced out to have you punished appropriately for stirring up the diplomacy.”

“With all due respect-!”

Erich tries to interrupt but the King raises a hand to stop him. He probably intended to cover for me. The next time I see you looking at Nonna’s valley between her breasts, I’ll forgive you.

“If the next 100 years were to continue in peace, then I won’t think about it, but right now, that is out of the question. I also think that this small incident that you did is not worth punishing you for. Therefore, I will have you repay me through action.”

Erich and I both may have made dubious faces.

“From this point on, you and Treia’s border should have few troops stationed in your respective garrisons. Strongholds or encampments may be set up, but I will still ask you.”

The King paused for a little while.

“On my order, can you tear a hole in Treia’s defenses and threaten them from the east?”

“Of course, that is an easy task.”

Their military force may be rebuilt and their defensive formations are currently unknown so there is no way to know, but it isn’t a good idea to show hesitation in this situation. I’ve already said it, so I’ll do something about it. Whether that strategy worked or not, the King once again relaxed his strict expression.

“Very well, then this future service in battle will serve to counterbalance your transgressions, and I will ignore this incident.”

The King clapped his hands and the people who exited the room rapidly stepped back inside.

“Then, let’s end it at that. You are dismissed.”

The holder of the highest authority in Goldonia slowly sat down on this throne and drank his tea. I bow once and was about to exit the room, but wasn’t allowed to leave just yet.

“Count Radhalde, Lord Hardlett, I would like you to know about the upcoming diplomacy...”

“.....Lord Hardlett, don’t run away.”

In the end, several hours passed with us having to listen to the noble employed in domestic affairs’ reprimands and the civil officials’ courteous complaints. Erich told me that it was because I fell asleep twice that it dragged on unnecessarily. At any rate, the interrogation is finished. I didn’t get punished, and now I can embrace the women in the capital as much as I want. Things aren’t all that bad.



I pick up Celia, who was wondering what would happen to me and was waiting nervously for me in the waiting room, and head to my house in the capital after a long absence. The ones who accompanied me this time are Celia and Nonna. Celia naturally follows me, but Nonna told me that it had been a while since she’s shopped in the capital. According to Celia, the spy, it seems like she secretly packed an amount of gold in the carriage. Even though Rafen’s population have received a sudden influx, the place is still a remote countryside. I’ll overlook it for now.

Nonna and the others, who went home ahead of us, probably informed the others because once we entered the house, everyone gave us a warm welcome.

““Welcome back home.”“

Melissa and Maria greeted us with a mitsuyubi.¹ Behind them, Catherine appeared while holding her son.

“Welcome... back.”

“Yeah, how have you been doing?”

“Perfectly. Um, what should I say?”

Catherine probably wants me to hold her son, but Nonna is giving off malicious vibes beside me, so she’s a little concerned about that. She is also from a high-class noble family, so she can imagine what Nonna feels like when a lover bears a son before the legal wife.

“You don’t have to worry so much.”

I pick up and hold the son named Antonio. When I look again, he has a refined face. I guess it should be obvious because his mother is such an outstanding beauty.

“He might become quite the womanizer in the future.”

“He will definitely become one... since his father is one.”

According to Catherine, the midwife that helped with Antonio’s delivery said that his genitals were quite large.

Before I realized it, Nonna, who was releasing malicious intent from the side, is now glaring at me with teary eyes. In that sense, she may be similar to Claudia.

I won’t let Nonna feel such painful emotions. I hug her close and kiss her, stroking her head too.

“You will also bear a cute kid. After all, you’re such a beautiful woman.”

When I lift her chin and kiss her again, the malicious intent disappears. Alright, this is good.

“As I thought, Antonio will also become like that...?”

I don’t listen to what Catherine says.

“Melissa, you did well to protect the house. Did anything serious happen?”

“Yes, well it’s just... that.”

It seems hard for her to say, so she pretends to hug me and whispers in my ear.

“You see, Maria has... I’m sorry.”

It seems like something I’m worried about. Maria has always been raised in Treia, and her family is in Roleil, a city in Treia. Even though it might be somewhat limited, hearing that I clashed with her mother country may have hurt her heart. Perhaps this

incident may cause her to abandon me and return to her hometown.

“Is Maria going to leave me?”

“I-it’s not that! It’s not that but...”

Melissa seems unusually hardpressed to speak.

“I won’t really blame you or Maria. Just tell me.”

She lowered her head as if preparing her heart.

“I-I’m really sorry! While Aegir-san was away, the both of us were comforting each other, but I got a little carried away... and it seems Maria has..... fallen in love with me.”

She lowers her chin with a slump. When I ask her, the conflict with Treia has limited effects and there aren’t many things talked about between the citizens. It also seems Maria isn’t too concerned.

And when I further listen to the story in detail, she was also lonely from the lack of men, and has been using the dildo every night. At first, it seemed like both of them were making each other feel good while they were playing around, but gradually Maria’s attitude and behavior changed, and even now, just being by her side at noon, she will blush and act sweetly just like she would do with a lover.

“So she fell from your charm and techniques?”

“I was also lonely because Aegir-san wasn’t here, and I just unintentionally got enthusiastic about it... But Maria also-”

“From now on, not just your words, I’ll hear it from her directly. Can you get the bed ready?”

It’s the perfect place for a man and woman to talk to each other.



“Then... I’ll be in your care after a long absence.”

Me, Melissa, and Maria are standing naked in the bedroom. Our relationship isn’t one where we get embarrassed around each other, but Maria is hiding half her body behind Melissa.

“What’s wrong Maria?”

“Um, it’s kind of embarrassing... And a man’s thing is a little intimidating.”

My dick stands erect at the woman’s premonition. The girls stare at the towering thing – Maria fearfully does so though.

“Have you gotten accustomed to it being just the two of you?”

“Eh!?”

Maria is confused as to why I knew about it as she widens her eyes in surprised and immediately looks at Melissa.

“I’m sorry... we’re Aegir-san’s women after all so I have to at least let him know...”

“Uuu-...”

I throw the embarrassed Maria roughly on the bed and lower my mouth to her crotch. Having used such a thick dildo every day, her hole has become moderately developed and has loosened quite a bit. Maria is holding my head and sending looks at Melissa to get her to save her, but of course she doesn’t help her. I’ve recently been neglecting to contact them, but it’s a body that I knew inside and out; once I slip my tongue inside and suck her clitoris, she yields to the pleasure.

“Aaau!!”

Without much time passing, she reaches her climax and Maria stretches her legs; her hole tightens as she gets into an exhausted state. For her to fall in love with a woman, and for that woman to be Melissa, doesn’t make me especially angry, but I won’t surrender Maria from under my eyes. I place my dick, of disproportionate size close

to Maria's delicate body, right at her entrance and push straight into her.

"Aaaa... It's entering."

My thing, even larger than the thick dildo, which Maria used while she had sex with Melissa, was spreading Maria apart as it penetrated her. It is thicker, and longer than the dildo and more than anything, the warmth from the flesh that only my dick possessed, instantly caused Maria's love juices to overflow.

"Fuu, your hole has become better than before. Melissa has probably stretched it out more as well."

"Ahaha... I'm sorry."

"Aahn!! It's thick! It's amazingly deep!"

Even if she gets drowned in the love between females, it seems that it can't win against the pleasure of my meat rod, as Maria moans while grabbing my hand and seeks my lips. It looks like this might be fine after all. If she said 'I won't do anything except with women, and won't even look at men', then I was planning to correct her and fuck her the entire day though.

Then, I guess I'll allow her to include playing around with females in her activities. But first, I'll ejaculate once.

"Take this Maria!"

I screw in my cock as much as it can, while it is still only halfway in, and hold down the girl as I cum. This is the first release since coming to the capital, so it should continue for a relatively long time.

"Ah-!! Don't!!"

Maria is struggling under me, but I won't stop now. My seed continues to fire abundantly and eventually the girl loses strength and becomes quiet. Melissa facepalms and has a troubled look on her face.

"Aah, I came alot. But what's with the sudden rampage?"

“I didn’t know that you were going to visit this time, so the contraceptive...”

“I was going to use it before we did it.”

I see, that’s because contraceptives are unnecessary when two females play with each other.

“Did you dislike it?”

“No, that’s not it. I don’t have the determination to make a baby, plus...”

Maria looks at Melissa and she becomes at a loss for words.

“If you get pregnant, you think you’ll separate from Melissa?”

“Yeah... Of course I like Aegir-san, in fact I love you. Of all the males in this world, you’re the best. But if Melissa isn’t here for me-”

Melissa turns her face away as she makes a bitter smile. I didn’t think that I would get a girl taken away from me by another girl. Not to mention, the girl who stole from me is my own woman, so I don’t know what to say. Whatever, I’ll just impregnate her with my seed. When she gives birth, her feelings might change again. Moreover, this kind of thing has its own way to entertain myself.

I pull my cock out from Maria as she rolls face up. A large amount of seed spills out onto the sheets from inside of her, but since it’ll get soggy anyways, it shouldn’t be a problem.

“Melissa, use the dildo on Maria. Do it the way you have always done it.”

Melissa smiles as she must have understood my intentions and cheerfully brought out the dildo. As I thought, you had it on you. She pushed one end into her own hole and was going to push the other against Maria, but I stop her.

“Melissa will be on the bottom. Maria will flop on top of her.”

“Aah... Maria, focus properly.”

“Eh? O-okay.”

The women become just like how I described and the two of them thrust their hips. They must have gotten used to doing it in cowgirl position as they smoothly moved their hips, giving each other deep kisses occasionally. From the intense shaking of the women's asses, my dick regained its hardness, not losing to its earlier state.

"Aahn! It's good Melissa! Thrust iiit!"

Maria, gasping in pleasure, contrasts with Melissa, whose face remains troubled. She probably knows what I'm going to do, since I've even gone so far as to determine their positions. And her premonition is probably correct.

"Eh? What is-?"

I grab Maria by the hips from behind, who is bouncing on top of Melissa, and put my dick at her entrance. Her vagina is already full with the dildo but her asshole is vacant. Is this Maria's first time? While I was thinking, I violated her asshole with my cock, wet with semen as lubricant.

"Fugyaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Her voice was like that of a cat that was stepped on. With a dildo in one hole and my thick dick in another, Maria was stretched to the limit with those two rods piercing her vagina and asshole.

"My asssss!! Waaaaaaa!!!"

There is no blood, so I think it should be fine, but just in case, Melissa and I both stop moving. After she screamed for a while, she slumped limply onto Melissa's chest.

"Maria, are you alright?"

"Melissaa, my ass, my ass is..."

Melissa speaks softly with Maria, who became teary eyed.

"Maria, it might hurt but do your best to endure it. You like Aegir-san, don't you? I also love Aegir-san and I also like Maria. The three of us have become one, you know?"

“Everyone is as one?”

“That’s right, so while I’m stuck with you like this through the dildo, you can also feel Aegir-san’s thing. Maria will also feel our two rods as well.”

“Alright... But hug me tightly, and please give me kisses too.”

When they finished talking, I resume using my hips. Melissa and I alternate in using our hips and the both us attack Maria’s holes. Maria desperately clings on to Melissa while enduring as we approach the finale.

“Here I go!”

“Kyaaa!!”

“Hyaa!”

It was an intense ejaculation in her ass. I wanted to screw as much into her asshole as possible and when I pushed my hips down, Melissa surprisingly moaned. Maria, who has pretty much passed out, has lost her strength so most of the power in my hips were sent straight to her.

“Th-the dildo is so deep, aaaaaoooo!!”

The dildo entered all the way up to the entrances of both of their wombs; Maria’s is a dead end but Melissa is different. It seems that the weight of two people has finally caused the barrier of her womb to be broken through.

“Yot-”²

I pick up Maria, while her asshole is still skewered, but the dildo is no longer in her. It has clearly thrust unusually deep into Melissa.

While fucking the ass of the trembling Maria, I try to pull out the dildo that imitated my dick, but it is caught at the entrance of her womb and I can’t remove it.

“W-wait! Use soap or something to loosen it slowly...”

“Melissa, don’t you think that the woman who stole my girl needs to receive some

punishment?”

“Eeh! No way, you can’t possibly...!! Aaaaaaaah—!!”

She screams like a little girl as I pull the dildo out. Melissa’s eyes lose their focus as she squirts her juices all the way to the opposite end of the room. Melissa convulses, almost as if she’s broken, but it seems she was able to genuinely climax from something other than my meat rod.

But the party isn’t over yet. I pull my cock out from Maria’s ass, and penetrate Melissa’s hole, which has been stretched out and is slightly squirting, all the way to her womb. I continue to ride on top of her as she collapses on the bed and I grab her ass and spread her apart forcefully.

“Come, Maria, fuck her ass.”

Maria, who has a blank look, wobbles over and attaches the dildo as she covers Melissa from behind. Once again, Melissa’s agonizing, yet pleasure-filled screams echo.



A few days later

“I was able to do some good shopping.”

“Another waste of money...”

Nonna is pleased with herself after buying new clothes and new cutlery, while Celia sighs. Sebastian was left at the territory so she probably grabbed a few fakes among those items. Did he think Nonna wouldn’t spend money for her amusement?

Melissa and Maria were sitting beside me, acting sweetly like cats. After the three of us participated in such intense sexual activities, it further deepened the bonds in our hearts. Occasionally, the two of them kissed, but I’ll overlook something like that.

“I think it’s about time to return to the territory.”

Melissa and Maria display a lonely expression, but it’s not like I can stay here forever. I allowed Adolph and Leopolt to take care of the territory management and daily

training respectively, but I also received information that Treia has reinforced the border with troops. It must be a defensive reinforcement, but if I'm absent for too long, they might get some strange ideas.

"Maria... will you not come with me?"

"I'm sorry, but I can't leave Melissa alone by herself."

Then the two of them exchange a deep kiss. Nonna and Celia were also amazed. I'd feel bad to leave Melissa alone too. I did enough these few days to make up for the half year that I didn't embrace them. I did it such that their holes will be kept gaping open for a while.



It's time to return now. I'll be taking the two children, Rose and Antonio, as well as Catherine, back with me to the territory. Antonio is still a baby so I'm worried about him for the journey, but it's already pretty safe and the season is cooperating. Catherine has also recovered from giving birth, so a small trip like this is no problem.

There is also a reason why I have to bring her along no matter what. After recovering from childbirth, it seems that Catherine is feeling the recoil of not being embraced by a man in about one year's time and is extremely pent up sexually. According to what Melissa says, during that time, she might end up eating Kroll or worst case end up finding a random man and being embraced. In the first place, Catherine is a woman who always had a lewd body. A one-year abstinence of men may have been an incredibly difficult penance for her.

In regards to her identity, right now at this current time, it's extremely dangerous for her and Rose to stay in the house. Consequently, she cannot stand by the window side to enjoy the good weather. If I take her with me to the territory, she won't be seen and she can freely move in and out.

"Shall we go, Catherine?"

"..."

Catherine remained silent as she hugged her baby and led Rose by the hand while following me. Unlike how we came, I can't have her ride with me on the same horse

while she's hugging her baby. So I had prepared for her to get on a large, high-quality carriage, which doesn't shake too much.

"What an amazing number of wagons... are they carriages?"

Celia looks at the large amount of carriages accompanying us and leaks an amazed voice as she herself gets on one.

"Yeah, Erich asked whether I needed any additions to the eastern army. I told him I didn't need soldiers, but he said that he would give me some large wagons instead."

In actuality, he said that it was possible to reinforce me with around 500 to 1000 soldiers, but with such small casualties, I only needed a little compensation and refused him. From now on, I want to form my army with the private army at the core.

There are 30 large wagons in front of us; they are the newest type of two-horse wagons so they are also fast. They are more expensive than a soldier's upkeep, so Erich is probably complaining.

"Leopolt was also quite noisy about getting more supplies somehow too."

What he wanted was the highly efficient wagons which could keep up with the marching speed of the cavalry. Now, the strategies he comes up with can be made more realistic.

I leave the operation of the wagons to the driver as I climb in as well. Inside the wagon, one side has an animal pelt laid across, so even if I lie down, it would be quite comfortable.

Celia is sitting in an upright posture even though she has that sword, which she keeps with her everyday, by her waist. Nonna was tired after she went shopping so she quickly plopped on her side. I also laid down in the shape of the '大' character while Catherine sucked on my meat rod.

"Wha-!!"

"What is it, all of a sudden?!!"

"...What are you doing?"

“Nh! Nboh-! Nguh!”

Catherine doesn't even pay the question any attention and just focuses on desperately sucking my dick. Her face is dyed red and it seems hard for her to breathe. It's rough and feels good, but Celia looks like she's about to explode so I grab her face and pull out.

“What's wrong?”

“Haa-! Haa-! I can't hold back anymore-! Please let me suck it, I'll go crazy!!”

Catherine brushes my hand aside and once again takes my cock all the way into her throat. She makes loud slurping noises and I can hear the choking sounds she makes as it hits the back of her throat, but she doesn't stop moving. This place is more enclosed than the house, so it seems that her sexual excitement finally burst out.

“A man after one year... this large penis is delicious, can't get enough!!”

I'm not mean enough to shake off the woman who is so desperately clinging to my thing with teary eyes.

“Celia, play with Rose. Nonna... let Antonio suck on your breasts or something.”

“To do this in front of a child, what a lewd woman...”

“Why do I have to let some other woman's baby suck on something like my breasts... nothing will even come out.”

Celia mumbles to herself as she holds Rose, while Nonna exposes her humongous breasts and lets him suck on them in place of a toy.

Without even checking on him, Catherine continues to greedily devour my cock. The sexual desire pent up in this woman was terrifying as she continues to suck from dawn – when we departed – to dusk, swallowing everything from the ten times that I ejaculated as well. Even when Antonio was given breasts to suck, her mouth didn't leave my meat rod. While sucking me, the genitals she was fondling at the same time, got all swollen, but still she didn't stop her fingers.

““How lewd is this woman...?””

Deprived of their meat rod, Celia and Nonna both masturbated and their lonely voices resonated in the carriage.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 600. Mountain Nation: Approx. 1000

Assets: 5900 gold

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Catherine, Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest)

Children: Sue (daughter), Rose (foster), Antonio (son)

Capital: (Melissa X³ Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 79

THE IGNORED PROBLEM

-Third Person/Treia POV-

Treia Kingdom, Capital Trisnea

The conference being held in the palace was in disarray. The conflict that happened this time was limited to just the citizens in the eastern area; it was reported to be a meaningless clash and besides the self-proclaimed experts endlessly blabbering about their extensive knowledge on the subject on the street corners, there was nothing else worth talking about. However, the conclusion of the conflict dealt a large blow to the military officials and those in the palace.

“The royal army got defeated by a single remote region feudal lord. Twice.”

This fact greatly caused the dignity of the army to fall. For the rebels to gather strength, the surrounding nations may misunderstand it. In addition, more than anything, it will invite the civil official nobles to intervene with the military organizations.

It can't just be told to them, but the actual casualties that occurred can't be hidden either. The form Treia's standing army currently takes, as well as the personnel will be grasped by the palace. It's impossible to hide or get the number of deaths and the equipment lost past them.

That's why the army decided to deceive them with the numbers of the enemy's army. With the testimony of the ones involved, it was known that Valeora fell due to what looked like 2000 cavalry, but the report was made to look like the invasion was performed by an army of 6000, composed of 2000 cavalry and 4000 infantry. If they didn't make the army which defeated them to be of at least the same size, they couldn't make any excuses. This led to the oversight of the fact that the enemy was allowed to invade all the way to the central area and the fact that they had a phenomenal marching speed was lost.

“Goldonia is our enemy! We must invade them back!!”

“No, we should deal with the unfaithful farmers first!”

“For that reason, shouldn’t we prioritize avoiding the confrontation and let the army recover first?”

The nobles raised their voices to assert their opinions.

With nobles, who only possess high standings, barking at each other about the government army that they knew nothing about, the conference is thrown into chaos. However, there are also reasonable and logical nobles, who held their heads in their hands, matching the king’s actions.

“Quiet down! This is a place to discuss the policies of the future for this country, not some bar on the squalid outskirts!”

The one who shouted is the prime minister of the kingdom of Treia, Marquess Dunois. He isn’t a military scholar with extensive knowledge, but his reliable ruling ability has brought stability to the country. He was also the one who opposed the kingdom’s participation in the earlier Arkland war. Everything was currently going well, so there was no need to purposely jump into a vortex of chaos. The end result was that his opinion was dismissed due to the king acting with the focus on military officials and the pressure of their influence, but the disorder that occurred this time proved the source of his premonition in a sense.

“Marquess Dunois! Then what ideas do you have?!”

“That’s right, I would like to hear your excellent thoughts.”

The King... Trisnea III looks on with a worried face as he nods, acknowledging the prime minister has permission to step forward. In the first place, he is the highest ranked person excluding the king; once he stepped forward, he calmed down the tumult.

“First of all, it is obvious that Goldonia has ambitions to claim our territory, and although there was the incident involving the clash with the one feudal lord, they are probing our forces and there is also the line of thinking that the Goldonian king plans to throw us into chaos; I don’t doubt he has some backing.”

“That is right!”

“We should defeat Goldonia!”

The prime minister ignores the hooting.

“But to attack Goldonia is a fool’s errand, and exactly what they are hoping for. Since we’re inferior in military force, we will instantly be pushed back and the surrounding nations that saw us taking preemptive action will not come to our aid.”

The nobles who were hooting look down, and eventually quiet down.

“And now that we are in agreement in observing this ceasefire, it is important that we clean up the rebellion army first.... Count Verdot, please tell us once more of the ceasefire conditions which you have won through intense negotiations with Goldonia.”

The prime minister jerks his chin with scornful eyes. Verdot, who has been hiding in the corner of the room up until this point, responded with a flinch of his shoulder, as he timidly stepped forward. When he walks past the nobles, they started to speak ill of him softly.

“.....First, Goldonia will immediately withdraw their forces from our territory. This has already been completed.”

Verdot speaks about the only condition which could be called an achievement in a hushed voice. However, none of the nobles give him any praise, much less open their mouths to say anything.

“That has been confirmed. Tell us about the other conditions.”

“In order to prevent accidental conflicts in the future, a buffer zone will be created on the eastern border line, where neither armies can enter...”

“A buffer zone even after they attacked us?!”

“Isn’t it essentially the same as having a part of our territory shaved off?!”

“That isn’t so! There are no villages or cities in the buffer zone, so it doesn’t particularly impede us!!”

Verdot tries to give an excuse but one of the military officials quietly puts a stop to it.

“In other words, when the rebellion army escapes into the buffer zone, there is nothing we can do?”

Silence encompasses the entire room. But the prime minister is merciless.

“That’s not all there is, right?”

“Yes... in order to not create a breeding ground for problems in the future, the casualties during the war will be mutually ignored.”

As soon as Verdot said that in a fearful voice, bellows fly at him.

“This traitor!!”

“This incompetent fool, you’ve said enough!”

“You should be ashamed of yourself!”

The conditions of the ceasefire are already common knowledge and there is no meaning to dispute them now. The prime minister just made Verdot into a sacrificial lamb and only brought it up to hang him. With that done, the anger will be directed to him and the emotional opposition to his own policies will be weakened.

“That should be enough. Count Verdot should also be happy.”

The prime minister steps down as if to drive Verdot away, and once again opens his mouth.

“In this way, we are at a considerable disadvantage in the ceasefire, but there is nothing we can do even if we lament about the past. Firstly, we should use our current forces to thoroughly sweep up the rebellion and then eliminate their resistance. After that, in order to deal with Goldonia, we will enforce conscription in our home country.”

Voices of confusion and doubt can be heard. Excluding the private armies of each feudal lord, Treia basically has just the standing army to recruit from. There were many times in the past during the Arkland war where the state of battle deteriorated after conscripting the citizens.

“With the addition of hiring mercenaries, the troop count will instantly be collected.”

One noble raised his hand.

“I don’t have any objections to the gathering of soldiers, but I heard that Goldonia’s central army or whatever already has over 40,000 troops, and is close to reaching 50,000 after reinforcement. No matter how many citizens we gather, we can probably only get 30,000. We can’t really stand up against them independently, can we?”

Those around him are secretly whispering ‘how weak’ and ‘coward’, but that noble is absolutely not worked up. Treia can only gather a maximum of 30,000 and, financially speaking, they couldn’t hire mercenaries for a long time. On the contrary, Goldonia can easily gather 10,000 considering their population. It wouldn’t even be a contest.

“I am not familiar with military affairs, but even if we fight decently, even I can tell that we only have a slight chance of winning due to the difference in military strength. But I also know that there is a way to close that gap.”

“A castle?...”

The prime minister nods greatly.

“Indeed, let us build a group of fortresses between the northern part of our country and the occupied territory. Fortunately, there is already an existing fortress that has been our line of defense against Arkland for such long years. We will extend that even further and reinforce it.”

“I see... that fortress has been a shield which safeguarded our country and kept Arkland away from us for many years, so if we strengthen it even more, then Goldonia will be unable to breakthrough.”

“The occupied territory is pretty much nothing but baggage anyway, and even if it has been taken from us, it doesn’t have much influence on our national power.”

“In addition, we must also take measures against the eastern feudal lord, Hardlett, who has dealt us a serious blow. The strength of his army looks to be a powerful cavalry squad. We should also construct a defensive encampment in the east... but it would be enough just to dig a moat and prop up some fences. If we can at least stop

the cavalry, they won't be that big of a threat to us."

"I see... as expected of the prime minister."

"Umu, if it's a fortress battle, then we have the advantage."

"If we can hold down Goldonia, restrain their military power and claim that they are doing something unjust, then Magrado and Yurest will also be on our side. That way, Goldonia will have no choice but to pull back their troops."

Goldonia's abundant territory is considered mouthwatering to every nation. There exists a common just cause and due to their gathering of forces to the south, the surrounding countries will definitely jump at this opportunity.

"I see, the prime minister's suggestion is indeed brilliant. But if we want to strengthen the fortress army and also construct a defensive encampment on the eastern side, we need a tremendous amount of labor. I don't think it is compatible with conscription."

What is needed the most for both public construction works and conscription are young men. The Treian kingdom doesn't have enough youngsters to distribute between the two options.

"Don't worry. We have labor force we can use, not only that, but they can be used till they break... On the occasion that the suppression of the rebellion is finished and we acknowledge their surrender, we will order for their execution to be cancelled. Then, we'll use those guys as labor."

Those who have conspired or supported the rebellion can't be included in the army in the first place. This way, there are no doubts on how to use them.

"But won't the punishment be too light on the rebels if we abandon the execution?"

The prime minister points out that he doesn't understand the reason and chuckles.

"You're wrong. Whichever the case, everyone will die after they work. I think it's more effective than hanging them."

The Treian King didn't object to his opinion; the strengthening of the fortress north of Roleil, the construction of the defensive encampment on the eastern area, and the

conscription of the regular citizens have been decided. The kingdom of Treia starts to act with the assumption of a full-scale war with the kingdom of Goldonia.



-Aegir POV-

Rafen

“Quite a few has been gathered.”

There are soldiers lined up, many wearing mismatched pieces of armor, in front of us..... although it's ironic how most of them are from the Treian kingdom. Since I intervened partway into the cause of the conflict – the farmers' rebellion – many of them survived and I accepted them into my territory. Amongst those survivors, many of them were single and chose to become soldiers rather than farmers.

“This number is enough to overwhelm our population. Are there any concerns with security?”

Celia frowns as she speaks worriedly. I didn't look at all of the names Adolph added to his citizens' record, but just from this incident, there should be close to 4000 who have been added. The original residents of the territory were 2000, but considering the acceptance of the immigrants to be more than the same amount of people migrated in, it caused the number to instantly balloon. It might be better to accept them this way, rather than assimilating them.

A large amount of personnel flowed into a closed environment in the remote regions. Even though they are technically from the same country, there is friction between them, albeit only a little. I'll leave resolving that to Adolph.

“The mountain nation, the original residents and now the migrated farmers – things have finally gotten chaotic.”

“But they are a force which is able to act regardless of their inclination towards the ruling family. We should think about using them together with the bow cavalry as our main force.”

It seems like Leopolt is looking to form an original army as the main army. By the way,

the new members who entered the private army are split up into branches within the army with their personal aptitudes in mind and are separated as much as possible from people of the same village when being placed in their squads. Until they are able to become familiar with the land, separating them from familiar faces will help to prevent rebellions. The threshold to cause a rebellion is lower for those who have caused rebellions once already after all.

“If possible, we want them to create families and if we put families into the towns and villages, we won’t have to worry so much.”

“There are many unmarried people among the immigrants. Men and women will eventually get together. Apart from that, how is the skill level?”

“There are no problems. Rather, they are more skilled than the private army we had up until now.”

I guess it’s because there are many who have come from the former Arkland, but although their equipments are all different, their movements are harmonious. If I’m careless, they will have more order than the eastern independent army, which is the legitimate army.

“This is the result after a blank of one year. If Arkland was in perfect condition when they fought in the earlier war, it would be hard to determine the victor.”

“Things look like they’re progressing steadily. If the army gets bigger, Irijina may also have more responsibility on her shoulders. Watch over her proactively.”

Irijina isn’t an idiot when it comes to military affairs, but she has no experience commanding a squad close to 1000 in size, so her abilities won’t reach the level of a commander on the front lines. Without Leopolt, she probably can’t hold it together.

“Have the citizens who aren’t soldiers gotten familiar with each other?”

Adolph calls out on the opposite side.

“It will be impossible to blend in with so many. Let another village be created and have them be a separate entity and the ones who have jobs will reside in Rafen.”

He seems to be consolidating the ones who are of the same village on our side as much

as possible. It would be too harsh to have people who just met with each other do something like farm work, which requires a close relationship. Naturally, they will not possess weapons of any kind.

“Wouldn’t leaving the tool craftsmen and simple blacksmiths in Rafen hinder their lifestyle?”

“Yes. They will really not be able to have anything, like hoes or water jugs, except simple things, and unless they come to Rafen, they will not be supplied with anything. There will be no exchange of goods in the village, but rather they will either sell their crops or work for money in Rafen; this cycle will encourage and stimulate business and eventually create a larger commercial area~”

I didn’t really pay much attention to the back half, but the main point is that if the merchants of each village are self-sufficient, then it won’t become a business. With Rafen in the center, and people coming to buy and sell goods, it will invite merchants over. If many merchants come, then things can be sold at a higher price and things can be bought at a lower price.

“I don’t know much about merchants and stuff. I’ll leave it to you, but it’ll be hard to secure houses for this many people.”

“Yes, the construction of houses and the city walls is part of the labor and is progressing but we still don’t have enough help.”

You wouldn’t think that anybody would attack a place so far in the remote region, not to mention, the army is stationed in the nearby garrison, but city walls act as a defensive structure as well as the symbol of security and furthermore, is also the proof of the feudal lord’s dignity. Without it, the residents will become anxious and the merchants will be hesitant to set up shop.

“There is a squad in the army you can use, who has experience constructing encampments, so I’ll have you use them.”

Leopolt also nods. We have people to spare so we revived the engineering corps, the small group which was created in the formation of the central army in the past. The digging of moats and construction of fences will be good practice for the engineering corps.

“The problem is that it will be costly...”

Celia’s eyes were dragged upward, but when I rub her ass, she calms down.

“If we get through this year, next year we’ll be able to take tax, right? If it looks like we’ll run out of money, then stop. Until then, you can do as you wish.”

Thinking about financing reminds me of something.

“That plundering we did..... how will we handle the selling of the spoils?”

There’s no point in having jewellery. Although it seems Nonna was able to secure a necklace that she was gazing reluctantly at.

“I called several merchant families from Stura. I was thinking of calling them on different days to compare their buying prices and doing business with the one who has the highest price.”

“I see, then it’s good to leave with you.”

For the transaction to go smoothly, we’ll have the merchants come by at least once. If there’s one that’s pretty, we should decide on her.

“Chief! Pipi has something to say too!!”

Pipi hops onto me and gives me a hug. She’s wearing a one-piece type of clothing, but the sensation of her crotch hitting my thigh feels soft. She probably isn’t wearing any underwear.

“Wah-! Pipi, your ass is-!! Don’t do something so vulgar please!!”

I can see the ass that Celia’s sticking out too. Pipi continues speaking while Celia looks on with a doubtful face.

“The chief’s horse is amazing! The mares that he impregnated before summer have all gotten pregnant.”

“Oh..... that.”

The mountain nation are proactively mating the horses and continuing production, but the kind and size make it so their speed on the plains are inferior to that of a Goldonian warhorse. They make up for it with their ability to turn sharp corners and their superior mobility on rough land and the wilderness, but the leaders of the mountain nation still say they want large horses no matter what.

So I gave them warhorses that were older or injured and had Schwartz try to impregnate them in the short time we had before the conflict. After that, the lust-filled horse impregnated over ten horses on the first day. Normally, it wouldn't be possible to do it more than once in a day though... It seems that right after he finished, he started attacking the other mares. At the end of the day, he seemed to be slightly slimmer and looks to have lost weight, but even so, he continued to mate.

"Schwartz is amazing! Pipi has watched horses mate many times, but it's the first time I've seen something like that. The semen spilled out so much that the tub overflowed! Even if he got kicked away by the mare, he didn't care. Although....."

Pipi hesitates.

"Although, Schwartz's penis was way too big and couldn't fit into some of the smaller mares. Not only that, his mating is intense, so when he's finished, the mares get exhausted and it was terrible."

"His large cock is unequalled? What a perverted horse."

"....."

Celia looks at me with narrow eyes.

"What is it?"

"It's nothing. I'm sure you'll get along well with him on the battlefield from now on."

"And also, all the mares that were inseminated got pregnant! I've never seen such an excellent stallion before! I'm certain that incredible foals will be born too."

It'll be several years in the future before the newborn horses will become useful, but Pipi is really excited. There will eventually be a time in the future where the production of horses may be useful too.

“Schwartz is almost like the chief! An incredible male!!”

What nonsense are you saying? As I thought, Pipi is still just a child.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 1200. Mountain Nation: Approx. 1000

Assets: 5400 gold (-500 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest)

Children: Sue (daughter), Rose (foster), Antonio (son)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (perverted horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 80

AS A CHIEF

-Aegir POV-

Rafen

Right now, the sounds of construction echo in this city, regardless of the time of day. In the middle of the day, there are sounds from the construction of houses and the sound of digging, for the moat that will surround the city. At night, under the brilliant light of the torches, you can hear the sounds from the construction of materials which will be used in the work during the daytime.

After the conflict and accepting a large amount of people, the slow and steady movements of the citizens continued. It seems like there is also a support organization to help the refugees located in the demilitarized buffer zone between us and Treia.

Many people have flowed in, and even though the agricultural pioneers have been dispatched to unexplored lands, there are still many who choose to stay in Rafen. Demand for houses remains high and the funds to build them are still sufficient for the time being. What is lacking is manpower and materials... to be more specific, we have the raw materials but are lacking the ability to process them. Just having the logs won't cause the houses to build themselves.

"The upcoming season is a slack season for farming so there should be more people to apply for the labor, however at the same time, we must hasten the construction of houses to protect the refugees from the cold. We will probably accept those from other territories who are working away from home as well."

The winter in the central plains is not that severe. Work can still be done in midwinter, and movement is not really hindered. Still, it would be harsh to live in a hut during the winter.

"If it seems like we won't make it in time, then we can build a tenement house and have them stay there. We're letting them stay for free after all, so they can't complain."

A house is given for free to those who have just recently moved. Of course, the necessary facilities to do work, furniture and all sorts of other things are none of my concern and it is up to them to figure things out. It would have been nice if we could get them to pay taxes as a form of debt on top of that, but they probably wouldn't feel good having to pay off so many debts having just migrated. It would be meaningless if they starved to death inside the house we built for them.

"At this rate, we will run out of capital. The stuff we looted... the importance of the selling off of the spoils is becoming even heavier."

"Exactly, so if you don't properly do your job, the citizens will starve, you know?"

Adolph laughs, telling me that I'm the feudal lord and that I shouldn't be so irresponsible.

"Well, I have my hands full protecting my women. I'll leave the residents to you."

"It's the first time I heard a feudal lord say something so terrible. Although there were many who just acted without saying anything... oh right, speaking of women, there are some who hope to migrate from the northern city just recently."

"Hm? They're coming every day, you don't have to report about every person."

"I guess, but it seems like a group of prostitutes, and considering the public morals of the town, I just thought to ask your opinion..."

What is he saying? For a body which has gotten tired from physical labor, women are as necessary as water is. I can at least give them a once-over later.



A few days later

There is nothing to be done except to watch over the continued reinforcement and training of the private army as well as the status of construction. Adolph and Leopolt know well that my checking is like a sieve with holes in it, so they are making sure everything is perfect themselves before executing what needs to be done. Because of that, I can sit at my office desk and drink alcohol in the daytime.

“Slowly lick it from the root.”

“Yes, like this right?”

Rita, wearing an apron-dress for maids, is in between the desk and the chair and is servicing me after pulling my pants down a little bit. It's a narrow space so she couldn't do any intense movements, but it's pretty nice feeling the warm sensation when I fill up her mouth. When I extend my arm to fondle her breasts from her shoulder area, Rita opens up the chest area and exposes her breasts. Good, she understands what I want – I wanted to touch them.

“Have you gotten better again?”

“Puha-! Yes, I practiced how to hold a large cock in my mouth. Nbu-”

With just that said, her words get cut off and pleasure runs through me. The stimulation isn't all that strong, so it doesn't make me feel like cumming, but it isn't bad just to enjoy this slowly.

When I just finished refilling my cup with alcohol, the door to my office was swung open. The ones who would come in rudely without knocking are... probably Carla or Pipi.

“Chief! I want to go back to where my friends are.”

“Guh-... What's wrong, all of a sudden? If you're just going to contact them, I told you that you could go whenever you like.”

Rita, who got surprised by the sound of the opening of the door, accidentally hit my meat rod with her teeth. It wasn't anything serious, it just hurt a little.

“It's not that! I want to stay there for a bit. If possible, I want to bring those who are currently training with me too.”

This is too sudden, is she no longer fond of me? Rita is gently licking the place that she bit, as if to apologize to me. Only my legs are under the desk, so Pipi who is on the other side, can't see Rita when she hid beneath the desk.

“No way! The chief is the best and greatest person. It's not that, I just want to return

the warriors to the village since enemies are coming now.”

It will take around two days for them, even if they move in a group, to get from Rafen to the place where the mountain nation live. I normally had them come in groups of 200 to train and have the rest go back to hunt and be nomads. So, to ask that those 200 return as well, it means that something bad has happened.

“What do you mean by enemy? There shouldn’t be any bandits in that area though...”

“The course we take and the clan we usually don’t meet has overlapped with each other. We have less numbers, so we’re at a slight disadvantage...”

They are nomads who move continuously to places that have water. Since we hunted them during the war, we messed up their moving cycle, so it seems they met up with the other clan.

“It’s the first time I’ve heard of clans other than you guys.”

“Hm? I didn’t talk about it. Pipi and the others are the closest ones to the plains people so you probably haven’t met them before. Actually, Pipi and the others are the biggest and the strongest but...”

It appears that the barbarians who came down to plunder from us is Pipi’s clan and her companions. But the effect of losing several hundred warriors in the suppression battle was big. I’ll have to think about this a little. I shove my dick deep into Rita’s mouth and hold her head down.

“I understand. The ones that are training can go. But I have a little idea so Pipi should wait for me in the town.”

“Aye. I’ll let everyone know! Oh yeah, that gloomy guy was looking for the chief. I saw him in the brothel area.”

That gloomy guy, must be Leopolt. But why would he look near the brothel area first when he wants to find me? There is no other legitimate place for a feudal lord to be besides inside the office in his own mansion.

Pipi leaves the room. I have to talk to Leopolt, but it’s not like I can go with my rock hard dick. When it gets this big, it won’t fit in my pants.

I have Rita come up from under the desk and hold her head with both hands. She nods to signal that I can be rough with her.

“Uggho! Nboh-! Gabo-!!”

I grab her head and shake my hips vigorously, thrusting my meat rod deep into her throat, almost as if trying to reach her stomach. Rita is getting teary-eyed and she’s making strained noises but she isn’t shaking me off and the hand rubbing my ass isn’t stopping either. For a while, I continue to forcefully fuck her throat and mouth and finally reach my limit.

“Uoo-!”

“Nbboohh-!!”

It might seem like cruel treatment to a woman if I ejaculate deep in her throat, but this is what Rita likes. When I asked her, she said that she couldn’t get enough of the feeling of my huge dick bouncing around in the back of her throat.

When I finished firing my semen in her mouth and pulling my dick from Rita’s throat, she collapses to the floor. When she gives me oral sex by taking it up to the root, she can’t breathe when I ejaculate, so it always turns out like this.

“As always, are you alright? I could ejaculate at a shallower place and it would feel just as good.”

“Haa, haa, it’s fine like this. The feeling of when this huge cock is about to take away my life is irresistible.”

To prove it, Rita shows me her crotch. Rita was wet there, as if she had sprinkled water on it. Rita, with her amorous gaze, rubbed her cheek lovingly against my meat rod and licked it gently all over, cleaning up the mess.

“It was good.”

I pet her head and was about to leave the room, but when I opened the door.

“Kyaa!”

“Hihih!”

“Wah!”

When I opened the door, the three maids jumped back. It seems like they were trying to press their ears against the door to listen. All of them were young women, not even reaching the age of 20 yet.

Even though there was a lack of manpower in Rafen, there aren't many jobs that powerless women, who aren't particularly skilled, can do. If they don't have anyone to rely on, the best they could do is to be a waitress for workers or do simple sewing jobs, or they could also embrace defiant men. For these women, the work at the mansion isn't hard or dirty, so it's quite popular.

Finally, they can also act as my lover, but Rita, as the maid with many years of experience, acts as a leader figure for them. It might have been obvious that those young women had some curiosity to seeing their leader get disheveled.

“...You girls, what do you think you're doing?”

“Well, that is...”

“Looking for Rita-san...”

“I thought I heard your voice come from here so...”

Everyone averts their eyes. Rita wipes her mouth, with semen dripping from it, while she lectures the girls with breath that smelled like my seed. It reminded me of the fact that Leopolt was still looking for me too, so I smiled at this comical scene.



“Did you want to show this to me?”

“Yes, I thought it would be faster to show it to you once.”

We are on the plains, a little distance away from Rafen, and in front of us is the mass of iron which Claudia gave us a while ago. It is pointing slightly upward and has a stake

stabbed in the ground to secure it in place.

“This is a weapon, right?”

At the very least, it's not a club that you use to swing around and beat enemies with.

“That's right. I will demonstrate it to you now.”

Several soldiers started moving and poured the black sand in, rolling in an iron ball inside as well.

“The target will be that.”

Rocks have been piled about 100 m in front of us, acting as a pseudo-wall of sorts. If you were to imagine this pile of rocks to stretch out endlessly, the thickness made it seem like a relatively sturdy wall.

“Fire.”

At Leopolt's small order, a flame was brought close to the iron tube.

In that moment, a sound that was almost like thunder resounded.

“What was that!?”

A billow of smoke is emitting from the iron tube and instantly covered my field of view. The wind carries the smoke away to reveal the stone wall, which has been blown apart and the rocks have been thoroughly scattered into many pieces.

“.....So it's that kind of weapon?”

“Yes, if you add this sand inside this iron tube... the gunpowder will explode and fling out the iron ball. You just saw how powerful it can be.”

The wall that was probably built for this demonstration is short and narrow, but if this thing is used against a castle wall of the same thickness, it will undoubtedly open up a large hole. Not only that, it is capable of such a destructive power at such long range, unlike the battering ram. It seems like it can be used in some very interesting ways.

“The weakness is that it’s heavy. It’s pretty much impossible for a soldier to carry it and move, so it will occupy one large wagon, and will also take a considerable amount of time to set up.”

“We can’t do anything about the carriage. Still, it is smaller than the battering ram and easier to move with. How interesting.”

“Yes, it’s not like we can’t make the iron balls ourselves, but I don’t know how to make the gunpowder or whether it needs to be collected. Let’s use this only in critical situations.”

“It’s true that I’ve never seen that sand before. We might be able to get it in the Federation though.”

“Please ask that madam. If we have several of these, it would expand the range of tactics I can use.”

“...if I write something strange she might come again.”

“Isn’t that a good thing? It would be convenient for us if she were to come and bring it to us.”

Leopolt is saying whatever he likes because it doesn’t concern him.

The next time Claudia comes, I’ll leave this guy to take care of the angry Nonna and Mel. And I forgot something important.

“You know about the issue with the bow cavalry, right?”

“Yes, the issue where the permission for them to return was given immediately and selfishly, without even a single notice to me, right?”

I purposely ignore him and continue.

“It appears that the mountain nation have some conflict to deal with. What do you think about intervening in this?”

Leopolt replies without the slightest bit of hesitation.

“It would be pointless for us, territorially speaking. Their land, excluding the mine, is barren, so it would be sufficient to construct a stronghold to protect the important places only. Rather, it would be a problem if the bow cavalry loses some of their numbers in this conflict. If possible, I would want to abandon that land and have everyone be brought here.”

Pipi and the others will definitely not agree with that. But Leopolt changes the tone of his voice.

“However, at this point, there may be some meaning to it. Not in the sense of ruling over the land, but to create a safe passage.”

It must be a strategy for when Treia kingdom becomes our enemy. Then, it's decided. Then I will back them up, as the feudal lord and also due to my personal feelings.

“Get together all the cavalry we have on hand and make preparations. I will personally lead them.”

“I understand. But are you using only cavalry again? Are you giving them preferential treatment, or did you get the short end of the stick?”

Even if he says that, it would be difficult for the infantry to keep up with us while we gallop around the vast lands of the mountain nation. Pipi and company, as well as the enemy, will also definitely be on horses.

“It's nothing like that, but when it eventually becomes a full-scale war, the infantry will also get their turn to hold fate in their hands. Leave them here to train properly.”

“Then godspeed, and please don't die.”

This guy always has to get in the last word.

The prepared military force consists of 700 spear cavalry (lightly equipped cavalry) and 300 heavy cavalry. We also brought large wagons packed with water and fodder, given by Erich, to follow us. After all, the mountain nation is a wasteland which continues on for a while and we don't know when we will be able to resupply water or food.

In any case, it would be out of the question to traverse the wide area of my territory if

we didn't have cavalry, so the similarities in composition to the central army are quite high. I tried to make the formation with bow cavalry but it ended with a bloody result. Firing arrows and galloping at the same time is like setting a blade on fire – pretty much impossible – so by the time three people got knocked off their horse and died, I gave up. In the end, I had one in every few people carry a bowgun as a test, but I don't know how useful it will be.

“Then, shall we depart?”

“Aye! If the chief is coming with us, it's like we have the strength of a hundred more people!”

“Leave it to me!”

The ones accompanying me are Irijina and Pipi. Pipi is obvious but when I thought about it, Irijina would need to stay for the training of the private army...

“That woman? It won't be a problem if she's here or not.”

That's what Leopolt said, so I took her along with me. He needs to be a little more considerate, and Irijina, who is overjoyed that I brought her along with me, needs to get a little wiser.

By the way, Celia, who usually sticks with me, got food poisoning the day before yesterday. It seems that the meat she ate with Irijina from the food stalls were rotten. Although Irijina looks as if nothing happened. I had a doctor look at Celia and it doesn't appear to be anything life-threatening, but she will just be having diarrhea for the next few days.

“I... am also... going with you... aaauu!!”

After she said that, Celia ran off to the toilet, and without even listening to what sound was made, we departed just like that. I told the other girls in the house to catch Celia so that she doesn't chase after us too, so it should be alright. She should rest her body for a while.

“Chief, you're not going to wear that sparkly armor? Even though it looks cool...”

I ignore that noise as we set off.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 1400. Mountain Nation: Approx. 1000

Assets: 4800 gold (-500 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs) (-100 army provisions, fodder)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest)

Children: Sue (daughter), Rose (foster), Antonio (son)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (resting due to diarrhea), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt, Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 81

CAVALRY BATTLE

-Aegir POV-

“Welcome and thanks for coming, chief!”

“Ooh, so these are the chief’s warriors?!”

Pipi leads us to her clan and the leaders of each family came to greet us. That reminds me, it’s the first time meeting the leaders since the suppression battle. They are all wrinkled old men and middle-aged men who are dark and sunburnt, so it’s not like I wanted to meet them anyways.

“The chief has come, now we can feel relieved. We won’t be scared of that Velen tribe!”

Pipi shouted in a loud voice and those around her all raised cheers. This is the first time I heard of the opponent’s name too. Their tribe is essentially the same as Pipi’s clan, so their name doesn’t mean much at all. Either way, we will crush them.

“If we continue on like this, we will confront the Velen tribe soon. The sun is already setting so why don’t we stop here for now. Let’s take our time.”

The soldiers who were brought along are mingling with the mountain tribe and are setting up camp around campfires and in tents. Pipi’s clan easily exceeds 2000 in total number, but there are many children in their tender years, so only a little over 1000 will become useful in battle. It seems that they did everything they could to send out all the warriors in the earlier conflict. To answer their loyalty, I’ll be sure to be helpful this time.

When I entered the prepared tents, there is a pelt laid out on one side and a carpet spread out to make it look more like a room. There isn’t a bed, so we’re supposed to just lie down directly on the floor.

“I’ve prepared the furs of wolves and demon rabbits. They’re fluffy and warm.”

Pipi will also be sleeping in the same place so she hops and dives into the furs; the pelts are soft so they absorbed the impact, cushioning her from the otherwise painful act.

“This is amazing... I’ve never seen pelts of this high quality before.”

Irijina is also my woman, so of course she will be sleeping on the same floor as well.

“Naturally. Both the wolves and demon rabbits are pretty tough, so they don’t come out often. Those pelts took me many tries to get.”

They’re quite valuable items then. As the three of us lied down, the fatigue from the journey caused us to get sleepy. I wanted to embrace Irijina but it would be a waste to get these high-quality pelts covered in juices. Today, we’ll just sleep like this.

“Please wait, chief! For the great chief to only have two women beside him on the floor isn’t right. You’ll lose dignity.”

“What?”

“Everyone from the clan is also worried that the amount of women the chief brought with him is too little. I explained to them that you left them in the city in the plains, but a great man like you has to get a whole bunch of women to serve you. I got the leaders to call them.”

Pipi clapped her hands and women started to flood into the tent. The women are of all ages; some are in their mid-thirties, and some are still just children.

“After all, the chief seems to like mature women.”

Pipi, you better not be referring to Mel. If you tell that to her, she’ll kill you.

““““I beg your pardon.”“““

Also, I did not pause because of the large amount of women. It was because of they are all stark naked. They didn’t take their clothes off during the time they were here, rather they were all naked in the first place.

“Did you walk outside like that?”

“Yes? Of course. Because I’ll be serving the chief.”

“I can handle this level of coldness.”

“Isn’t that obvious?”

“It is an honor for women to attend the chief. Even if they’re naked or whatever, they don’t feel embarrassed. Pipi will also strip.”

It seems that I’m reminded of the difference in the mountain nation’s shamefulness every time. Before I knew it, the naked Pipi and Irijina lay beside me, as I hugged them one on each side. Even though they are promiscuous and dressed up, my body and soul are tired. The women’s sole objective is to tend to me though so they didn’t really ask for anything in particular.

“...You don’t have pillows or blankets?”

The fur that was laid out is warm but if I don’t have a blanket, my body will get cold.

“There are pillows and futons too.”

“Here you go.”

“I will warm you up.”

A plump woman gets by my head and lies face down, wiggling her ass. Is she asking me to get on top of it? I put my head on top of her soft ass and lie sideways, then instantly the other women pulled all my clothes off and covered me. I see... a female butt pillow and a female body futon...? How extravagant. Since we’re all naked, it is certainly warm when we stick to each other like this, but the sensation that touches my nipples isn’t good; it’ll get my cock hard.

I close my eyes and enjoy the wonderful feeling of this top-class bedding, superior to any kind of high-priced pillow or futon. I feel like I could hear the women’s voices in my dream.

“Look... it’s this soft and not even hard, yet it’s this big.”

“I’ve been embraced by the previous chief but... even when he’s hard, he’s way smaller than this.”

“It’s like he’s a man above all men or something, right?”

I feel a light breathing sensation against my crotch.

“Hey, don’t you wanna try getting this thing completely erect?”

“No, we can’t, if we wake him up, he’ll get angry.”

“He’s not such a narrow-minded person, try licking it.”

I feel the warm sensation of a tongue crawling over my crotch. Although it was unskilled technique, the warm sensation of the tongue crawling along my rod and around my tip cause my meat rod to get bigger. After about 8 minutes, my dick was erect and the woman separated her tongue from my dick.

“Y-you’re kidding...”

“I can’t believe it.”

“Wooow...”

The girls are all surprised at the size of my thing. I feel several hands touching my rod carefully, as if it was something dangerous. Aside from the woman who initially touched it, there were more participants that came one after the other, making small shrieks in astonishment as they did so.

“Did Pipi-sama and Irijina-san take this thing in them?”

“I can still understand if it’s Irijina but... I don’t know about Pipi-sama.”

The men and women in the mountain nation are all small in size. The ones who are chosen to be warriors among them have robust bodies but there are not many who have heights above Nonna’s. When Irijina is put in their midst, she’s an unbelievably large large woman.

“Nnh, it’s warm.”

“Aau, I’m getting crushed...”

When I open my half-closed eyes, I see Irijina hugging Pipi and sleeping soundly. It looks like Pipi has it rough though.

“Don’t you want to try putting it in?”

“Don’t push yourself, it’ll tear.”

“But leaving it erect like that is rude.”

The whisperings continue, and as a result, the woman who initially used her tongue to caress me took responsibility to make me cum. Unlike the earlier tickling from her tongue, she took the tip into her mouth and began to caress me. The other girls help out by running their hands along my shaft and provide stimulation to my balls.

“It’s still getting bigger...”

“It’s practically that of a horse’s thing. No, he’s probably even bigger than the horse we have.”

Nobody would get upset when their dick gets praised. Combined with the caressing of several people, the pleasure builds up and my dick starts to pulse.

“Ah-, it’s twitching. His seed’s coming out.”

“Look, you’re gonna get the floor dirty. Catch it, catch it.”

“It won’t all fit in my mouth... nnboh-!”

The woman that was servicing me is holding back the other girls and filling her mouth with my cock. The stimulation of her teeth touching me caused the dam to finally burst open, and my seed erupted, draining my balls.

“Uuu-!”

“Nnnh—!!!??”

I was trying to pretend to sleep, but as expected my groan leaked out. The woman's mouth instantly filled up and she asked other girls to help so that she wouldn't spill.

"Eeeh!? That much comes out?"

"Anyways, you're switching with me!"

Once the women got their mouths filled to the brim, they switched with each other, and once the eighth person's mouth reached the limit, my ejaculation finally stopped. Many of the women couldn't talk so there was a moment of silence, and I could only hear the sounds of gulping.

"Geho- gehoh¹, what thick seed. It's not going down my throat."

"It seems like I could get pregnant through my mouth."

"It's too big and my jaw..."

"Hey, let's clean it up."

Close to 10 tongues crawl around my rod, and they licked up all the remaining seed. Is it about time soon?

"Nnh... What's going on?"

I pretend to wake up as if I had been sleeping all this time.

"N-no, it's nothing. Your cock was just too marvelous and we were just admiring it."

"Please don't pay us any attention and relax your body."

"Is that so? Then I'll go ahead and rest."

I took the girl, who was the first one to put her mouth on me and was still coughing from the large amount of seed, and rolled over with her.

"Eeeh!"

"I like the shape of your body. I'll make you my body pillow."

“Sure! It’s an honor!”

The other women look on in envy as the woman resting against my chest smiles and my dick regained some of its hardness. Irijina, who is sleeping beside me, is starting to really squeeze Pipi and four of the other girls are trying desperately trying to pry her arms off.



Two days later

“I see them! It’s the Velen tribe!”

We mobilized together with the mountain tribe and it took about two days until we finally got the chance to play an active role. The ones who can’t fight, like the children and livestock, are taken to the rear, while the warriors retrieved their bows and swords and straddled their horses. The cavalry unit I brought with me are also getting their own preparations in order.

The Velen tribe who was seen at a distance is also doing the same and are clamoring to make preparations to get battle-ready. They were clumping up like a dumpling so it was hard to count their numbers, but they didn’t look like they had drastically more numbers than we did.

“Are we going to fight the instant we meet up? Are we not going to talk?”

“We fought before with the Velen tribe at the watering hole. We have no choice but to fight.”

I don’t know much about it, but it seems they have their own code of conduct. Although it makes things easier for me to understand if we’re fighting.

“Form into ranks! Do it in three sections!”

The first difference between our forces and theirs appears here. The enemy mountain tribe has their own peculiar formation of using entire families, and are moving in clusters of 50 people. We have formed in clean lines, a product of our military training. The bow cavalry are at the vanguard, while the heavy cavalry are lined up behind

them, and the spear cavalry spread out around the flanks.

“Those guys are starting to move!”

One of the leaders point and shout at the enemy who is charging at us, but there is no confusion or fear in his voice. They have complete trust in me, and are exclaiming things like ‘if the great chief is here, it is impossible for us to lose’. I’ll have to respond to their expectations.

“Charge!”

We are also charging head on towards the enemy. The distance between us is about 1 hour apart if we were on foot, but since we are both riding horses, the distance instantly closed.

“Fire!”

It was here that another point of difference showed itself. It was the ability to use the bow and arrow. The Velen tribe are using the traditional crude bow and arrow which the mountain tribes typically use, while on the other hand, our allies are using the high-performance composite bows. The arrows are also refined as their range and power are high. Still, in the previous battle, the mountain tribe was able to dominate in a skirmish because their overwhelming skills were taught since they were very young, but their skills are the same in this fight. That meant that the difference in the performance of the weapons became a force in its own right.

“Amazing...!”

The enemies, who were also trying to fire off their arrows at us, are starting to fall off their horses one after the other. We preceded them by just a few seconds, but the effect was tremendous. The bow cavalry stowed away their bows, unsheathed their sword, and equipped their shields to block the arrows. Considering their ridiculous confrontation speed, they had no room to let loose a second volley.

The enemy then released their arrows as well, and although some of the bow cavalry were defeated, it paled in comparison to the amount that the enemy lost. The shields caused arrows to ricochet away and the performance of the armor was also different.

Just like that, both armies did not alter their charging routes and enemy and allies

alike are on an extremely fast collision course for each other.

“There aren’t many opportunities to see this amount of cavalry pass each other during a charge.”

Irijina, who had galloped to meet me from the head of the heavy cavalry, smiled. Irijina has also gotten accustomed to battle, so she has no fear and instead appears to find it fun.

“Don’t stop moving! Charge through!!”

Shouts and roars resonated as the cavalry began to cross swords as they passed each other. Swords were swung around and heads started to fly through the air, regardless of gender. The ones who couldn’t control their horses collided straight into the enemy and both of them were flung away. But the gruesome battle would not continue for long. Since both armies did not decelerate, it was only an instant before the cavalry forces passed by each other.

In most cases when the mountain tribes battled each other, they would charge at each other while having a shoot-off with their bows and then stopping to cross swords with each other after or they would pass through each other and once again shoot off their arrows. The enemy is also passing through and nocking their arrows again, turning back to move to the rear, but it isn’t finished yet.

After the bow cavalry’s turn, ours was next; we still have the 300 heavy cavalry lined up side-by-side.

“Gh!! There are still some in the front!!”

The commander shouts, but it’s already too late. To deal with the slower heavy cavalry, the bow cavalry just have to stay out of their range and easily take them out. But the distance between them and us have already closed, so they have no time to ready their bows. Moreover, they have picked up speed on their horses already and couldn’t change directions fast enough.

When we collide with them head-on, their light army is no match for the chunks of iron that is the heavy cavalry.

“Send them flying!!”

As soon as our allies made contact with the enemy, an explosive-like sound roared. The spear our allies thrust out skewered many enemies, and many of our adversaries were flung away on contact. The flustered enemy began drawing their swords to clash with us, but unless they find a gap, they won't be able to pierce the steel armor.

"Serrya!"

Irijina is also using her spear to take out the passing enemies, skewering many of them, lifting them up and then throwing them aside. Only their horses were able to escape danger, as they ran to the back and escaped. She couldn't lose to them.

I push aside the escorting cavalry trying to protect me and in a single strike with my spear, the passing enemy lost his upper body and crumpled to the ground. I switch to the next enemy, who watched me take out the previous warrior, and then took a thrust, the blade of my spear separating his neck from his shoulders.

"Another one!"

I was going to bash the additional enemy, but seeing as it was a woman with teary eyes, I graze the top of her head and smash the middle-aged man's head who was behind her.

"Take that-!"

Just when they were about to completely pass by, I let my guard down and felt something hot running through my arm. One of the soldiers had cut me. Blood started to flow but the wound wasn't that deep.

"Tch-!"

Irijina was about to turn around but I stopped her. The one who cut me was a female, who is just a young girl, and even if she was to turn around now, she wouldn't catch up with them. On the contrary, it would screw up our strategy.

Should I praise them for their skill in aiming for a gap in my armor or should I blame myself for letting my guard down? I lick the flowing blood. It has truly been awhile since I've tasted my own blood.

“Hardlett-dono! Are you alright!?”

“The chief got his arm injured!”

“It’s not a big deal. It was done by a woman, and it’ll heal quickly.”

The ones around me were panicking for a second but seeing as the wound was shallow, they were relieved. Well, let’s just finish them off now.

Pipi looses an arrow straight up into the air. This time, the arrow didn’t make noise, it instead had a fluttering red cloth attached to it. That’s because there is a possibility that the roar from the horses’ hooves could drown out the sound.

The enemy suffered large casualties and their ranks are disoriented. Since they knew that the bow cavalry which passed through them initially have turned around and are going to come at them, they have to stop and change direction and decide whether to deal with them or escape.

“They don’t have the luxury to do so though.”

War cries reverberated and the spear cavalry scattered around the sides fiercely rushed at them. The enemy quickly brought out their bows and looked to shoot the spear cavalry down, but after changing directions, the soldiers in the middle of the dumpling couldn’t let loose their arrows, and many of them have lost their bows and arrows after passing through our ranks for the second time. In addition, the small groups of spear cavalry spread out in all directions are closing in, so they couldn’t get all of them at once, causing a melee to begin.

Both of them are wearing light armor, but there was a clear advantage in this close-combat fight between the spear cavalry, equipped with a 2 meter spear and bow gun, and the mountain tribe, who only had a cleaver-shaped sword. There isn’t much difference in speed, so once the distance is closed, they were unable to use the tactic of running away and shooting arrows.

“The battle has been settled.”

“We were able to defeat the Velen tribe in just one try! We did it!”

Pipi is delighted and Irijina is worrying about my injuries while smiling as well.

When the bow cavalry returned, all of the Velen tribe surrendered, including the non-combatants in the back. I acknowledged their surrender and the Velen tribe got absorbed into Pipi's clan... or more accurately speaking, my clan.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 1600. Mountain Nation: ????

Assets: 4600 gold (-200 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest)

Children: Sue (daughter), Rose (foster), Antonio (son)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (resting due to diarrhea), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt, Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 49, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 82

CHAMPION OF THE BORDER

-Aegir POV-

I am sitting on a chair made of bones from livestock in the middle of a grand tent. There is a strange headpiece placed on my head. Moreover, there is a cloak made of animal fur hung on my shoulders.

“This is proof that you are the chief. It suits you.”

Pipi is praising me, but this appearance really makes me look like the boss of the barbarians. Celia and... Leopolt, I'm glad that they aren't here. Irijina will probably forget about it after one night's sleep.

“Oh, great chief. I am thankful and admire your lenient treatment towards us, the defeated.”

“Sure, if you'll swear loyalty to me from now on, I won't treat you cruelly.”

The men who were kneeling in front of me stood up with eyes of warriors who regained their spirit. They seem to be slightly arrogant, but that much is fine.

On both sides, Irijina and Pipi are in a suggestive appearance; they are wearing simple clothes that have their breasts and thighs exposed and are leaning coquettishly against me. Although Pipi never had much breasts to show off in the first place. They indeed look like sex slaves but, in front of the mountain tribe, having many women wait on you is proof of the chief's authority. In addition, there are about 10 more women from Pipi's clan that are waiting on me at my feet.

“Not stealing women or livestock, you are a person with a bottomless heart; I am in admiration.”

In a battle between mountain tribes alike, even when the battle has been settled, not everyone will be killed. Usually, the conditions will be for the chief to be killed and for their women and livestock to be taken away. Those women who cannot be taken will

be raped on the spot. Those women may then get pregnant and have new blood poured in them.

This time, none of that was done. Their chief only lost his position and didn't get killed.

"From now on, you will be one under the chief. Thus, nothing will be taken from you. Now, let us hold a friendly banquet!"

One of the allied leaders shouted loudly. With a responding cheer, that acted as the signal to bring in the food – a barbecued pig, and several other meat dishes are being brought out consecutively. Lots of alcohol was passed around as the party began, while the current allied leaders sat on my left hand side and the newly befriended leaders sat on my right hand side.

"Everything was accepted quite easily. You've fought with each other several times, do you not have grudges against one another?"

While drinking alcohol, I quietly ask Pipi.

"They were enemies in the past, now they are friends; there's no reason to hold a grudge against friends, right?"

What extremely simple thinking. But I prefer this way of thinking.

The banquet picks up in excitement and I exchange alcohol cups with the leaders of each family. With this, they have sworn loyalty to me from their hearts. Their devotion will not be broken until I die or if I have done something dishonorable. It seems that they believe that if they betray someone, they will earn the anger from the god of the mountain and the souls of their entire tribe will fall to the depths of hell.

Irijina has become more drunk than she appears, but has continued to drink to the cheers from the leaders, while a portion of the leaders proceeded to move in front of me.

"Chief, I've heard from the Peel tribe... no, from our new friends that the chief only brought two girls along with him, is that the truth?"

"That is true this time around, but back home... in the plains, I have more."

“Hooh, about 100 of them?”

“Not that much. About 10.”

What does he think I am? It seems the rumors in the capital say that I’m a sex monster who surrounds himself with 50 women though.

“Too few!”

“That’s not good!”

“To only have 10 women... Are the plains people blind?!”

The leaders are clamoring unanimously, then rush out of the tent. I have a bad feeling about this.

“Chief! Behold!”

I was called outside and when I went out to look, it really looked like about 100 women were lined up.

“Ones with pretty faces, ones with large breasts, ones with large asses and can bear lots of children; all of them are wonderful women. Please take them and keep them by your side.”

It was almost like a scene from a slave city, but the expressions on the girls faces are cheerful. Even if I wanted to check the goods and fuck them on the spot, nobody seemed like they would refuse me.

An orgy with close to 100 women is something that I’ve considerably yearned for, but even if I embrace them here, I’ll have to bring them with me. If I bring this many girls back home, Nonna will faint and the blood vessels on Celia’s head will rupture.

“No, er...”

It’s pathetic of me to act like this in front of women, even if I say so myself, but the leaders’ eyes are all sparkling and the women look motivated. If I were to refuse, I would not look good as a chief nor as a man.

“Hmm, it might be harsh on you guys.”

Irijina appears from inside the tent. As expected, after drinking an entire barrel of alcohol, she has gotten a little red.

“What will be harsh?”

The leaders look at Irijina with a judgemental look. They probably thought that she was jealous, and would reject other women.

“It’s because you guys have small bodies. Take a look at this.”

Irijina pulled down my pants without hesitation and exposed my dick. When she got close to me, I could feel an intense alcohol smell emitting from her mouth. As expected, she has drunk too much and is in a drunken stupor.

“Wah-!”

“It’s too big!”

“Like a horse...”

“That thing will be impossible.”

“It’s like that even when it’s drooping.”

The women all started to voice their opinions and as expected, I can see that they are afraid.

“What the-!”

“This is...”

“A huge spear, isn’t it?”

“If only my son was also that big.”

“Ufuu.”

I'm extremely reluctant to show the leaders but Irijina is hugging me tightly. It's not like I could just throw her off either, so I couldn't do anything about it.

"As you can see, it's a large spear. Of course, if he was lusting for women, it would get several times bigger. Wouldn't that be hard on your bodies?"

The people from the mountain nation all have small bodies so their fear was increased even further. I could hear the women say 'It'll break me' and 'I won't be able to bear children...'

"That's why Hardlett-dono limits the women he has to those who could take that. In other words..."

After saying that, Irijina fell asleep. She fell to the floor as I pulled my pants up. It was a reckless act by an idiot, but I'll use that.

"So that's how it is. I don't want to break a woman's body, so I won't be embracing all of you.... if you really want new blood, then please do it with my soldiers."

"It certainly isn't good if the woman's stomach breaks..."

"There's no other way. You guys can do as you like."

The women have hardly been able to meet soldiers and plains people alike and should have great interest in them as well. I left, hearing the coquettish cries and voices of excitement behind me. I'll let the soldiers make some good memories.

"But, as new additions, we can't just offer nothing to you."

For the mountain nation, it was natural to offer gifts to the chief.

"The food and alcohol were delicious. You've killed some of your best livestock for that right? That's enough for me."

"No, this will cause the mountain god to doubt our loyalty. We will prepare a separate offering for you..."

It was then that a man appeared... the man who was the previous chief of the Velen tribe. Right now, that status has been taken from him, and he is just one of the leaders

of the tribe who swore loyalty to me.

“Since Pipi-sama has become a woman who serves the chief, we have no choice but to offer women as well... come here.”

A woman, large in size with respect to the mountain nation, appeared. She looks to be about the same age as me, maybe a little younger, and her breasts are modest, but her pretty face slightly tinged by the sun, is a light brown color, causing a fresh aura of sexiness to drift around her. What was characteristic about her, that made her unlike all the previous girls, was that she wasn't wearing clothes that exposed her body, but she was wearing a battle dress.

“Is she a warrior?”

“Yes, she has a good build and is suitable for the chief's large spear. She is also skilled in martial arts so please feel free to use her for all sorts of various things.”

“My name is Luna. I can do everything from spear handling to nocturnal activities, so please request anything of me.”

The woman called Luna bows her head deeply.

“I look forward to having you.”

“I am extremely delighted, though undeserving of your praise...”

She speaks in a strange manner, or rather, she's stupidly polite. They're words I don't really hear much from women.

“Luna was interested in the plains people at a young age, and we did not have the skills to teach her, but she was able to finally attain a manuscript from long ago.”

“So she memorized how to speak in such an old-fashioned way.”

It'll be hard to correct something she learned from such an early age. I guess that makes her interesting, so I don't mind that much.

Suddenly, I saw the follower that was by her side. At that moment, the follower's eyes opened wide in astonishment. Oh right, she was the girl who cut me during the battle.

It doesn't mean much to me at this point in time, but it seems that she was worried about that.

"Uhm... uhm-!!"

"What's wrong?"

"No... nevermind..."

"Is that so?"

"? Is there something wrong with Ruby? She is Luna's younger sister and is accompanying her as a follower but did she cause you any inconvenience?"

"No, it's nothing."

I lightly pet the head of Ruby, who was frightened and looking down, and I accept the alcohol cup as Luna swears her loyalty. I thought it would all be over after this, but the leaders escorted us to a place a little bit away from the tent which had become the location of the banquet.

"Let's use another method for swearing loyalty between a man and a woman."

I see, that is certainly necessary. I hug Luna's shoulder and enter the tent.



"Please drink."

I drink a gulp of the alcohol that Luna offered me and we finally begin with our consummation of loyalty.

"Then, please enjoy."

Luna removes the armor she wore on her body and takes off her underwear. She isn't plump, but her toned body is a wonderful thing of beauty. I especially want to suck on her brown colored thighs.

"Please do mine too."

Luna smiles and strips me. After everything was taken off, my dick sprung up, about half erect.

“Uu-!... What a terrifying dick, I am in awe.”

“It will still get bigger. Are you going to use your mouth?”

“Yes, I have been trained in the service of men.”

Luna first kissed my balls and the tip, then licked the shaft slowly. And when my cock starts to get fully erect, she opened her mouth as wide as it could open and took me in.

“gh-!?! M-my deepest apologies!!”

She indeed has the knowledge but she has no experience actually putting it into practice, since her teeth scraped against the head of my dick. She is flustered and bowing her head in apology but it didn't really hurt anyways.

“You don't actually have much experience, right? You don't have to worry about me. Just continue without being concerned about it.”

“...Yes. I am still a humble novice... a young virgin with her hymen intact.”

I thought she had a little experience, but I didn't think she would be a virgin. I spread her crotch and slip a finger in her.

“Fumu, the membrane is still there.”

“...it's embarrassing... so please have mercy on me.”

I guess it was too much for her when I suddenly turned her over and peeked inside. But since I know she's a virgin, I'll have to properly prepare her.

“You don't have to service me. I'll do it now, so you can relax.”

“Eh? But with such an awesome thing-”

I ignore her words and caress her slightly protruding breasts, crawl my tongue over her nape and rub her ass by reaching over her genitals. Even if she doesn't service me, when I can do whatever I like with this erotic brown body, my cock will get hard whether I like it or not.

After I touched her body for a while, Luna started to get turned on, her face melted, her nipples and clitoris got erect and her vagina started to drip with her juices; I can finally start the ritual to make her my woman. I lay her down on her back and got in between her legs. I placed my dick on top of her stomach and Luna leaked a slightly nervous shriek.

"What a big spear, I'll gladly become its target. Please, expertly tear my purity."

Her words don't match her expression but if I tease her, it would only make her suffer, so I'll do this in one stroke. I push my meat rod against the entrance of her vagina; Luna has a larger build but she is still smaller than Carla. It doesn't look like it will go in like this, so I'm sorry that I have to put some power into it.

"Fuun!"

"gh-!! UUuuuuu!!"

I instantly penetrate her with my meat rod and tear her membrane, as I swear I could hear the sound of it getting ripped. Luna moans and turns her jaw away as her mouth is left gaping open.

"Did it hurt? Cling to me, bite me, do anything that will help you take your mind off it."

I say that as I move my hips in to rub against her. It might be better if I waited a bit, but with such a brown beauty as my partner, my reason is slowly crumbling. My hips are moving on their own.

"W-wonder... ful, it's pleasurable... my body is g-... going numb!!"

I hug Luna, who is crying while saying these lies.

"You don't have to lie. It's natural for the female to feel nothing but pain and not be able to do anything. In fact, it's my responsibility."

I hug Luna strongly and I felt her relax a little as I use my hips. Her modest breasts pretty much disappear when she's lying flat on her back, but the feeling of her erect nipples are able to get me excited.

You can only hear the sounds of Luna's moans and flesh slapping against flesh in the room. If this goes on, it will take awhile before I'm able to ejaculate. Thinking about that, I felt something warm from behind me.

"I will also service you to make up for my sister's portion."

The one who pressed up against me was Ruby, who before I knew it, got naked and is rubbing my back with her breasts. She has similar brown skin like her sister and a similar toned body, but I believe that in the future, she may have larger breasts than her older sister.

With two women sandwiching me, my arousal increases, and my seed finally rises up from my balls.

"Do you want me to let my seed out like this... regardless if you get pregnant?"

"Of course! Who in their right mind would refuse the seed from the great chief?"

Luna seems to welcome me to do so, so I can ejaculate without hesitation. For the last few thrusts of my hips, I made them super strong.

"Aah!! So rough! Thick! It's swelling!!"

Semen flows through my meat rod and instantly inflates. Luna left her hand on my shoulder as she moaned loudly.

"Hiiiiiih—!!"

"Uooo!!"

With my last thrust, I slam my hips against her and hold my position deep inside her, releasing my semen into her womb.

"Aah, it's squeezing me nicely. It feels like it might tear it off..."

“aaaaaaaaaaaa..... oooooooooo.....”

“So much seed poured into... my sister... she’ll get pregnant for sure.”

I ejaculated plenty inside Luna so I pull my dick out from her, and after a breath, Luna doesn’t move. When I look carefully, she’s fainted while hugging me. In a panic, Ruby rushes over and releases her.

“She’s fine. She’ll eventually come to.”

It isn’t rare for the women I embrace to faint, so as expected, I’m getting used to it.

“You’re used to it, aren’t you... I guess it’s natural since you have that huge spear.”

Ruby has a tone which seems to criticise me, but it still isn’t over yet.

“Ruby... was it? You’re next.”

“Eh-!!?”

“When I saw you in battle, I wanted to meet you at least once. I’m glad you’re quite the beautiful woman.”

I raise her chin and push my dick in front of her. After attacking her sister just a while earlier, my dick is covered with both of our juices but it still hasn’t withered yet. Ruby unconsciously retreats and plops to the ground.

At the appearance that invites the violent lust of a man, I get turned on and lift Ruby up, throwing her beside Luna. In no time, I hold both of her hands down and steal her lips.

“Noo! Don’t be rough!”

“Stay still!”

I suck on her breasts, forcefully sticking my hand in her crotch to stir her up. Her body is smaller than her sister and is still immature, but that stuff doesn’t matter. I wouldn’t mind if this girl broke, I just want to slam my cock into her right now and dominate her womb.

Ruby is desperately trying to resist, but after seeing the scar left on my arm, she relaxes and burst into tears.

“gusu-, eguu¹.....”

I grab the crying Ruby’s legs and spread them wide, pushing my incredibly inflated meat rod against her stomach, almost as if it would be pierced through her stomach... but then I came back to my senses. I don’t have a preference to make women cry, and the one who is getting her belly written on by my dick, is still just a girl that is close to a child. Why am I acting like such an animal? For my dick to get this inflated is quite rare too.

There is only one thing that comes to mind.

“I got drugged?”

“Please forgive me... I was planning to accept everything, but for me to go unconscious is unforgivable.”

Luna, who came back to her senses, is apologizing with her head bowed to the ground. Apparently, the alcohol she had me drink in the beginning had some sort of drug in it.

“It was rude of me. It was shallow thinking on my part that it could at least allow you to enjoy yourself to the fullest.”

Good grief, I can’t really get upset at a woman who is bowing like this. More so if she was just trying to let me enjoy myself.

“It’s fine. But please take responsibility for this.”

Because of the drug, my dick has become so enlarged that it’s hard to walk, and it’s become too hard.

“Of course I will. Even if I end up being broken, I don’t mind, so please thrust into me.”

After saying that, Luna spreads open her vagina on her own, and it was already quite red and swollen from the intercourse that we had earlier. If I slam my cock into her, which has already gotten larger than it was before, then she will undoubtedly break. I

don't want to do something so foolish as to break the woman that I attained on the first day.

"Get on top of your sister, rub it out with the two of your bodies."

"Ah... I understand."

Luna got on top of Ruby and my cock was placed between their crotches. I rub my cock between the two sisters as I move back and forth.

"Ruby, sorry about that. Because of your sister, I've caused you to have some scary memories."

"No, it's okay.... your penis is coming all the way to my breasts. It's too incredible..."

For awhile, Ruby is watching my penis curiously, but when I adjusted my movements to rub her clitories, Ruby quickly started to lose her composure.

"Uuuu, it's like a log rubbing my crotch."

"Your sister... is also feeling good!"

While I'm at it, I might as well get the two of them to climax, as I slip a finger into her vagina and rub a pleasurable spot. For the two virgin sisters, this sensation should be a first for them.

"Hiih!! Aaaaaah!!"

"Onee-chan!!² Nee-cha!! Aah—-!!"

The two of them threw their heads back as they climax, while I also release my semen to match them. Whether it was the drug or a natural ejaculation, I don't know, but it felt like the moisture from my entire body turned into semen and fired out, literally covering the sisters with man-juices.

"Ruby..."

"Onee-chan..."

The two of them hug each other as they bathed in the semen, collapsing into an exhausted pile of flesh. I also released too much and started to feel sleepy, rolling over in the character ‘大’.

And so, the mountain nation sisters became my women.



After that, I took the two tribes with me around the mountain nation's territory for a while, absorbing the neighboring tribes one after the other. The mountain nation had their own policy when it came to moving about, so when I took advice from them, we could easily find the other tribes. And since I've absorbed the two strongest and largest tribes already, nobody was a match for me, resulting in most tribes either being beaten in a single blow or surrendering before the fighting began, then swearing loyalty to me.

Of course, since the area of the mountain nation's territory is so large, it would be near impossible to subjugate every single tribe that lived there, but at the very least, there are no more people that oppose me from the areas adjacent to Goldonia and Treia.

Even though I conquered them, if I gather all the tribes together, then the watering holes would dry up and the livestock would lose the grass they eat. Besides, it wouldn't be meaningful to force our lifestyles on them. The only things I asked of them is to come for training on a regular basis and to send warriors during emergency situations. If I was going to do what I've been doing until now, then it might have been good to get their loyalty. They would just continue to live by hunting, being nomads, and worshipping the mountains.

Then, it was finally the last night before I return home.

"It's the first time seeing this many assemble here..."

"You're right... it's incredible."

Pipi and Ruby both sounded surprised. The number of people from the mountain nation assembled in front of us, including the children and elderly, may reach ten thousand. When I return, they will once again scatter and return to the wasteland in their own tribes and clans. This large gathering is quite the memorable scene.

“You don’t have to think too much about it. Just live as you have been doing so, and when I tell you to come, make your battle preparations and come. That’s all!”

I’m not really suited for speeches so I just kept it at a simple declaration. Silence continued for awhile after I spoke, and I thought that my message missed the mark, but I could hear a quiet voice start saying something.

“To subjugate such a large number of people... is he the grand chief?”

“No, he’s a king. He is the one chosen by the mountain god, he is our king!”

“Our great king!!”

The mountain nation shouted and cheered in reply to my short excerpt. It was a cheer which resounded like it would never end. The soldiers I brought along with me must have gotten affected by the passion, but even the eastern army and the private army are shouting in excitement as well.

“It would be nice if this can be recognized as me becoming king.”

Irijina turns her head at my mumbling.

“No, it’s nothing.”

I entrust everything about each clan to the newly appointed leaders and take only Pipi, Luna and Ruby with me.

“The leaders are happy too. Plenty of new blood has been introduced.”

It seems like some lucky soldiers were able to sneak a few of the mountain nation women with them. When I look around, some of the soldiers’ feelings have spread to the women and the soldiers are bringing them home. I might have unintentionally encouraged marriage.

Well, let’s try to imagine what reactions Nonna and Celia will have when I bring back these sisters.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Late Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 2000, Bow Cavalry approx 1000 (others still training)

Assets: 3600 gold (-1000 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest), Luna, Ruby

Children: Sue (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (...), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt, Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 50, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 83

CELIA'S SUFFERING

-Aegir POV-

"Aegir-sama!!"

We were not even back at the mansion yet, but as soon as we could see the city of Rafen, one person was riding towards us on a horse. It's my cute Celia, coming down with her fluttering silver hair just a little bit above her shoulders.

Did she hear about our estimated time of arrival from the light cavalry we sent before our army returned? It was my first time leaving her and setting out on an expedition so she must have been lonely. She lined up her horse with mine and jumped up onto Schwartz.

"Aegir-samaa, why did you have to leave me?! If you at least let me know the location, I could have caught up with you immediately!"

Celia has always been uptight and harsh with her words and actions when she's in places where she could be seen by others, but now she's loosened up nicely. There are tears welling up in her eyes. Even if she knew where the destination was and could catch up quickly, the mountain nation's territory is vast, and it's a harsh environment that if an unfamiliar person were to step foot in the area, they would have to be prepared for death. As expected, since she's jumped at me like this, it seems like she didn't have that resolve.

"What are you talking about, weren't you feeling unwell? It's important for you to rest your body sometimes."

"It was only a few days! Do you know how lonely I felt during this past month?... Nnnh-!"

I hug Celia close, steal her lips, and pressed her head against me as I slip my tongue in her mouth.

“Nnbh-... , nnhah!! Nnnh-!!”

It was a deep and intense kiss which continued for awhile, and when both our lips were spread with saliva, it overflowed and dripped onto Schwartz’s mane. Schwartz would turn his head around several times, as if yelling ‘what do you think you’re doing?’, but seeing as how we weren’t going to stop, he gave up and quickened his pace. I guess he wanted to hurry and get home.

After a good ten minutes, we finished kissing and I release Celia; I slurped back her remaining saliva that was left on my lips. Since it’s been so long, it feels nice.

Celia does the same and gulps down the saliva on her lips, as she is now staring at me with wet eyes, unlike her earlier teary eyes, but she notices the peeking glances of Irijina who was close by.

“Ha-! No... this is-!!”

“It’s fine isn’t it? I think it’s quite wonderful that you’re so passionate.”

“Yes, you’ve shown us something nice.”

“What an intense kiss, eh?”

“I wouldn’t mind if you were to start here, you know?”

Celia jumped in my arms while the army was still forming their ranks, so obviously, she would attract the attention of everyone there. Not to mention, it was a ten minute kiss, so it was impossible to talk her way out of this. Her face turns red as she gives up on trying to think of an excuse, pulling my cloak and wrapping it around her. I stroke her head that was under my cloak as we return back to the city.



When we enter the city, just like the time before we left, there were many people stacking stones, digging holes and building houses. But there are clearly more buildings inside the city now, and you can see houses in the midst of being built here and there. In addition, there are some crude structures consisting of erected pillars with a plank laid across.

“What is this? Is it a house?”

“That seems to be a simple dwelling, since we can’t have the residents sleep outdoors until their houses are finished being built.”

Fumu, its appearance is poor, but it can stave off the wind and rain, and even if winter comes, they could light a fire and they wouldn’t have a problem. It’s not like a proper house can be built easily in a short amount of time. The citizens are also trickling into the territory now, so it’s a necessary building.

“The moats have been dug too, huh?”

The inner city of Rafen is still developing so they have some luxury to start building the city walls. With that said, large stones aren’t used to build a large scale wall, instead, a wooden wall will be built on top of a low stone fence, almost like digging a dry moat. Like this, it will be enough to defend against monsters and wild dogs, and even if an army attacks, it would still be better than nothing.

“I was also involved with the construction of the outer wall!”

Celia puffs her chest out with pride. Ooh, I can really tell even above her clothes. Celia’s chest has gotten bigger.

The portion Celia was involved in was too small for me to remember, but to make up for the time that I didn’t see her, I pet her head and ass while listening to her boast.

“So that’s why! When I’m not here, this part will...”

“Is that so? Celia’s quite cute.”

While still talking, the soldiers disperse back to the garrison, and we head back to the mansion.

“So this group here..... why are there six people?”

After the soldiers dispersed, it was supposed to be the four of us: Celia, Irijina, Pipi and I, who will head back to the mansion. But Luna and Ruby followed along without saying anything and Celia starts staring at them with a doubtful look. The girls were in the eastern army and private army and are wearing their battle outfits so they were

wandering to begin with.

“Why didn’t you two go back to the garrison?”

Celia is looking closely at the faces of the two of them, who were covering their heads with hats, and finally realized the two of them are girls.

“A woman-!?..... don’t tell me-!?!?”

She swiftly turned around to look at me.

“Ruby and I have come to serve the chief. Thus, it is necessary for us to be by his side.”

“I am onee-chan’s... onee-sama’s attendant, that’s why.”

“Then, you have already...”

“Yes. My virginity has already been torn by the chief. He has churned the depths of my being.”

“It wasn’t put inside me... but ‘it’ was sprayed over my entire body.”

“Uuu... I thought it would be like this. No, it’s alright. Rather, let’s be happy that he settled with only two. If Pipi and Irijina-san didn’t control him... it wouldn’t be strange if he had an orgy with 100 people.”

After Celia mumbled something, she once again held her head high and confronted Luna.

“Aegir-sama already has several wives, and he has surrounded himself with women other than his wives too. So first, I will introduce you to them!”

“From seeing that passionate kiss earlier, you are also one of them, right?”

Celia is trying to show her spirit, but remembering how she was seen fooling around, she turned red and wrapped herself with my cloak again.



“Haa, so you’re from the same village as Pipi?”

After a complete introduction of the family, Nonna and Luna are talking. From what I can tell, Nonna is openly trying to intimidate her, but Luna is undaunted by it. She is old-fashioned and often distracted with a tone which is polite to a fault, but she has a similar scent to that of Irijina. On the other hand, Ruby has completely sensed the hate coming from Nonna, and is looking at her with upturned eyes.

“Yes, I swear on the pride of my clan that I will do my utmost best for the chief. If he tells me to stay by his side, I will obey, if he tells me to tend to him at night, I will do my all to please him.”

Nonna heaves a sigh and counts her fingers by bending each one. Nonna is well-versed in the lifestyles of nobles, and did not really criticize when the head of the family surrounds himself with women other than his wife, but in terms of numbers, it may be starting to reach a point where she is unsure how to react.

I was entertained by Nonna, while drinking alcohol after finishing my bath, and also gently stroking the bellies of Carla and Mel, who were beside me. It has been 6 months since I’ve impregnated them and their stomachs have expanded so much that it is clearly bulging. It seems they have been relaxing in the room with the fireplace lit throughout the day so as to not let their bodies get too cold. It will start getting chilly during this time of season, so Carla will have to be especially careful when using the toilet.

“As expected, you won’t do it with this stomach, right?”

“If you get naked and catch a cold, it wouldn’t be good after all.”

I put my ear to Carla’s belly, but I don’t feel anything.

“It moves sometimes... but you’ll fuck me until I go crazy when the child is born, right?”

“I also want to be fucked until I’m dead.”

When I flirt with these two pregnant women, Nonna, who was talking with Luna, looked over here with a slightly constrained look.

“Muu, you’ve already gotten pregnant so please don’t talk about the next stage! There’s an empty womb here after all.”

Nonna rubs her own belly coolly.

“Shall we do it?”

“Yes! Today will be the day the seed will-”

“Yes.”

“Of course.”

“Me too, please.”

It looks like the girls won’t let Nonna be alone after one month’s hiatus of not doing it. Celia, Rita and Catherine take my arm and leads me to the bedroom.

“Why don’t we go too? Even if just for the mood.”

“You’re right. Let’s go see Aegir-sama’s tool after a long absence.”

It seems Carla and Mel will come along with us too.

“Pl-please wait! Why are you leaving me here, apghl-!!”

Nonna runs hurriedly and stumbles, tumbling over exaggeratedly. It’s fortunate that her breasts acted as a cushion and she didn’t hit her head though.



The fireplace in the room has been lit in consideration for the pregnant women, which will make it quite hot when we move around, but having sex covered in sweat isn’t bad either.

I get naked and sit on the bed. My cock has not gotten erect yet and is drooping down. In front of my eyes, the four women’s eyes light up, as they were waiting for this exact moment.

“Nonna, let’s start from you.”

“Sure! I’ll be taking the first spot in line then.”

Nonna happily takes her clothes off, and her huge breasts spill out seemingly making a bouncing sound.

“Then, please excuse me...”

Nonna gets on the edge of the bed and spreads her legs as she gets on top of me from the front. She grabs my dick and guides it to her entrance.

“Nnsho-... huh... eh-”

My dick hasn’t even gotten halfway erect yet, so it probably is hard for her to put it in, so I help Nonna out by holding her waist.

“Here... like this!”

“Aah!! I-it’s in... It’s been such a long time that it surprised me.”

Nonna took some time to regain her breath before swinging her hips. At first she was grinding her hips as if rubbing herself on me, but changed to moving her hips up and down. Of course, the reason is because I want to see her boobs jiggle.

“Nonna’s nipples are cute, eh?”

“I’m glad! Please enjoy them to your heart’s content.”

Nonna hugs my head and presses me against her chest. It was a terrific sensation and my dick, now at about 70% erect, expanded.

“Eeeh!? It’s swelling inside me! No... this isn’t goooood!! If this continues, I will be the only one who cums! Please go a little easier-!”

“I’ve neglected you for one month. Today, you don’t have to hold back and just feel good.”

Exactly as I've said, I plan to focus more on pleasuring the women rather than to ejaculate. I rub Nonna's sensitive spot and thrust deeply all the way inside her. After repeating this several times, it looks like Nonna has reached her limit.

While pressing my head against her breasts, Nonna throws her head back and moans. This room is made for my sake to have sex with the girls; the walls are thick and the windows closed tightly, so it would be hard for the voices to leak out. Nonna did not hesitate to howl like a beast and then stiffens at the same time her hole tightens and clenches down on me.

"Woah there!"

I catch Nonna to make sure she doesn't hit her head on the floor from falling backwards, we kiss and then I lay her down on the bed.

"kay-"

"Ack-!"

I haven't cum yet so my dick is still rock hard, so I had to pull out somewhat forcefully, as the other remaining girls turn to me.

"Who's next?"

The girls were slightly distracted at my fully erect cock, but Rita and Catherine quickly cling onto my thigh.

"Please... please plunge this huge cock into Rita!"

"I also want it too. You made my body this lewd, and to just abandon me for a month, how cruel..."

The two of them crawl their tongues all over my dick as if they were struggling against each other for it, but Catherine seems desperate. Rita is licking my meat rod to seduce me, while Catherine really can't hold herself back anymore.

"I'm sorry Rita. Catherine, come over here."

Rita steps back inevitably and Catherine got on top of me from the front, her face was

all smiles.

“Here I go! It’s a penis after a long break!”

“Uoo-”

It was like she jumped on top of my completely erect dick as she swallowed it all the way to her deepest parts. Her entire weight was placed on me so it was able to reach deep inside her, although it doesn’t look like Catherine felt any pain as she didn’t complain.

“Good! It’s so good!! Your penis is in me! My beloved penis!!”

“..Uwaa”

Carla and Mel, who were watching on the side, and also Celia, had an amazed look on their faces. However, Catherine pays them no heed and swings her hips with my meat rod swallowed up by her hole while repeatedly screaming ‘penis, penis’. Her movements were several times more violent than Nonna’s.

“Aaaaaoooo!! Hug me tight! Do it until my spine is about to break-! Pinch my nipples and my clitoris tooo!”

Of course I’m not going to kill her, so I suck on Catherine’s modest breasts, and embrace her tightly.

“Hm?”

The instant I sucked on her breasts, I can feel quite some fluid in my mouth.

“Are you squirting breast milk now?”

“That’s right, since you’ve embraced me, my breasts leak a lot now. Because Antonio will have to drink plenty, please fuck me lots and make it so my body will always be able to lactate!!”

Catherine is the mother of two children, and right now Antonio is the one who needs the breast milk the most. So I can’t be too rough with her nipples.

Instead, I rub her ass with my hand and use my index finger to poke her insides.

“My ass!? Fine, tease me there too, do whatever you please to me.”

Catherine did not rest the movements of her hips as I fondle her ass. But it would take some time if I were to accompany her to the limits of her sexual desire. Rita and Celia are still left, so I want to settle this quickly.

I insert three fingers into her ass and suck her nipples. We separate our bodies for a little bit and I also pinch her clitoris. Being rough with the clit for the other girls may be too strong of a stimulation, but if it's Catherine, she can handle it.

“No way, at the same time! No moree! I'll cum!”

“Please don't hesitate to satisfy yourself. It's been awhile since you've climaxed, right?”

“Eyes! Please look at my eyes!”

Catherine squeezes my face with her hands and we look straight at each other. Normally, Catherine would close her eyes and throw her head back when she's close to climaxing, but today she wants to climax while we stare at each other.

“Yeah, I'll look at the disheveled face of yours filled with pleasure... so cum!”

“Ah-... aaaaaaaa!! Aaaooooo—!! Nnhhii!!”

At the last moment, I pinch her clit and dig deep into her ass, while Catherine climaxes with me staring at her and saliva drips from her lips. An ample amount of liquid sprayed onto my chest, even without me having to touch it, breast milk flowed out, and her vagina squeezed my meat rod so tightly as if trying to strangle it to death.

Her climax continued for several minutes, and eventually, Catherine slowly closes her eyes.

“Nonna, I'm leaving her with you.”

I let Nonna handle Catherine, who fell unconscious.

“...Uuu, it's nice to be able to squirt breast milk. If I got pregnant, I could also squirt

lots too.”

Nonna lifts up her own breasts and sucks her nipples. Naturally, nothing comes out from them.

“Is Rita next? Come on.”

“I’ve been waiting for this.”

Rita is facing backwards and pushes her ass towards me, drawing my cock near her crotch with her hand.

“Which one do you want?”

“I’ll do your vagina, since Celia’s still left after all.”

“Certainly. Ngh!!”

Rita takes her weight and drops it on my meat rod, swallowing it up inside her. I’m trying to fuck the girls without cumming, so my dick is way harder and bigger than before. I might have messed up the order, and I should have did Celia first.

“It’s good, this tremendously huge dick! Is it getting bigger again?”

While stroking the huge ass of Rita who is swaying her hips in front of me, she slowly drops her body backward.

“You have a large ass as well.”

“Don’t say that... Please don’t look.”

Unfortunately for you, your ass is pretty much taking up my entire view so it’s quite impossible not to look at it.

Rita is pulling out all the way to the tip, then drops her hips back down and repeats this motion many times, making large strokes so as to pleasure me.

“It’s quite long, so my hips can’t keep up.”

Rita is moving desperately now and beads of sweat start to form on her ass; I guess she's getting a little tired as her movements are gradually getting slower.

"Does it not feel good?"

In spite of it being the third person, I didn't ejaculate, so she swings her hips and looks at me with an anxious face.

"No, it's just that I thought I would make you girls feel good. So don't hesitate to move however you like to make yourself feel good."

Rita's face relaxes into a more relieved look and she changes her movements into a rubbing type of motion. Watching her twitching buttohole as she moves is somehow quite amusing.

"I wanted to take you in up to the root, but... there's still that much left."

Rita speaks in a somewhat disappointed tone and strokes the part of the cock that couldn't fit inside. Right now, the only ones who could take me all the way up to the root are only Melissa and Irijina, and maybe Catherine, but it might hurt her so I didn't try it. However, Rita's ass is big, and she has a suitable vagina with plenty of room. Since she's been trained in the past, she has also developed a moderately loose hole. It might actually be possible for her.

"Rita, you want it up to the root?"

"Of course I do."

"If you're prepared to get hurt a little, would you like to try?"

"Please do-!!"

Alright, then why don't I thrust my rod to the deepest part of her hole. I adjust Rita's position and thrust my hips up into her.

"Aaah... It's in... it's way deeper than ever before..."

There is a little bit left that could be put in, but that one little bit wouldn't fit. Rita is bouncing with her weight and desperately trying to force it in, but her womb is

seriously resisting and it was not possible for it to enter anymore.

“It can’t fit-, anymore than this!!”

It can’t be helped. I’ll help her out.

“Rita, clasp your hands above your head.”

“Like this?”

Rita, facing the opposite direction while in the cowgirl position, clasped her hands on top of her head, as if to show me she has completed what I asked. After seeing that, I grab Rita’s ass and pull her towards me strongly, inserting the rest of my meat rod into her.

“Eh?..... ts-!!”

At first, Rita had no idea what just happened, but she should have definitely heard the sound of her womb being dug into by my meat rod. Then the difference in time closes as she feels both pleasure and pain.

“Ah... Aaah... Aaaaaaaaaaaaah!! Agghaaa!!!”

“Wai-! Aegir, she said you can’t! Rita’s eyes are rolling back!!”

I couldn’t see Rita’s face from where I was, but Carla was able to see that her face wasn’t usual and was yelling at me from the sofa.

“Aaaaahh-!! Don’t!! Stop-!! OOoooooh!!”

Rita is desperately screaming for me not to stop in broken speech, and ended up spraying a mixture of her love juices and urine everywhere before fainting.

“Ggh... I can’t pull it out. Celia, could you give me a hand and pull me out?”

I got Celia to help me pull my dick from Rita, and after my meat rod dug into her womb and was pulled out, it must have acted as stimulation, as Rita once again sprayed her love juices in a lewd manner.

“Go wash her in the bath.”

I have the maids who are waiting outside the room take care of Rita. The maid was in bewilderment as she took Rita, who had her tongue sticking out and was intermittently spraying fluid from her crotch, to the bath.

“Well, you became the last one, huh?”

“No, it’s alright. Besides, it’s become the most incredible since we started.”

As Celia has pointed out, my cock has become something quite serious right now. I thought I was going to ejaculate once with Rita but since she’s in ‘that’ kind of state, she can’t swing her hips anymore.

“Wouldn’t it be too tight for you? If you want, you could make me cum once with your mouth so it’ll shrink to a certain extent...”

“No, please just slam it into me like this!”

Compared to when Celia lost her virginity, her hole has gotten accustomed to me, not to mention her body has also grown bigger, so she should be alright.

“What position would you like?”

“The first one we did it in, please.”

I sit on the bed and spread my legs. Celia also seems to like the sitting position where she can be hugged. But compared to its initial state, my cock has been holding it in for all this time and its fiendishness is still increasing, bending backwards and sticking, not only up to my belly button, but all the way to the center of my chest.

“If it hurts, don’t hesitate to tell me; it’s not like we’re stopping. I’ll just cum once before fucking you again.”

“I’ll be alright. Here I come.”

Celia straddles me and slowly drops her hips down. Naturally, she wouldn’t be able to fit it in all the way to the root, and when about half of my cock entered her, the tip of my dick can already feel that it has reached the deepest part.

“Aauu... It- it’s tight. But I can do this!”

As usual, her hole is stretched to its limit and feels quite tight, but even so, I can still move around somewhat.

“Ah! Aah! Aahn!!”

Celia is cute while she’s gasping for breath, as she swings her hips and rubs my dick in a half bent over posture. I think it’s a movement that requires a considerable amount of stamina, but it may be a result of being trained in the military. After moving for a certain time, her insides clench up, and she doesn’t forget to ask for kisses.

“Celia-chan has gotten better, don’t you think?”

“For sure, she’s like a prostitute.”

Celia ignores the jeering from the spectators as she continues to move her hips. As I was in the fourth round, I was already close to reaching my limit. As I sucked on her chest at my limit and breathing roughly, she gently pats me.

“Sorry, I’m cumming first. I’ll continue, but can I let it out first?”

“Yeah, of course. This is also fresh and... nice.”

Celia keeps petting my head as I grab her ass with both hands, thrusting my hips up and ejaculating.

“Ooh!”

“Aaha!!”

Plenty of my pent up semen flows out as Celia’s body was bent backwards, indulging in the pleasure.

“Muu... even though it would have been better if the ejaculation was inside me.”

I ignore Nonna’s discontent as my long ejaculation continues, eventually running out of strength and my meat rod slips out of Celia. Seed overflows from Celia’s hole with

squirting noises.

“Fuu, that was good.”

“It was for me too.”

But Celia shouldn't have cum yet.

“If you use your mouth to service me, I can quickly go again...”

Celia pushes me down and brings my softened dick to the entrance of sloppy hole, whispering to me.

“I don't think that's necessary.”

Celia shifts her lips from my ear to my nape and gives me a lick. She usually does this quite often so I hug her and let her do as she wishes, however what came next wasn't a kiss, but pain.

Celia has bitten my nape a little bit stronger than you would think is normal for play biting. Her teeth dig into my skin. I was about to stop her, but what prevented me from doing so is my dick that instantly got hard. With an unbelievable energy, my meat rod expands, and just from the force of swelling, it dug into Celia's hole.

“Here it comes!! Thicckk!!”

My dick has now swelled to the point that it is larger than it was before I ejaculated and even without moving, it is starting to attack Celia. I have experienced this sensation before in the past.

“Did you peek on me?”

Celia pretends not to know anything and averts her gaze, but her face quickly distorts. She's done something stupid. Celia is way prettier than the girl from that time, plus I have an emotional attachment to Celia. Even though she did the same thing, the reaction from my meat rod is different. It's like the swelling of my dick won't stop at all.

“The swelling isn't stopping!! AAah-! Aegir-sama, you're breaking me!!”

The tip is already forcefully pushing up into her, and the rod is stretching out her hole, making stretching sounds. It's something that I could no longer control myself and just by feeling it, it seems that it can continue to get bigger too. As expected, if I were to continue, Celia would break. I thought I had no choice but to pull out but after my meat rod expanded, it got stuck in there and I couldn't pull it out. Then, as I tried to forcefully pull it out, it got stimulated to the point where it caused me to spray my semen.

"Uwaaaaa!!"

Celia is in agony on top of me as my ejaculation erupts more intensely than usual, expanding her stomach. It seems like even Mel and Carla sitting on the sofa from a distance away could hear the sound too, wondering what it came from.

"-the heck is that?!!"

"It was that big!? Even though she barely moved."

"Why is that? No, rather is she alright? Celia-chan has been broken..."

By the time the other girls started looking on abnormally and realizing, Celia's consciousness has already gotten hazy and an incessant amount of fluid was flowing from her crotch.

"Aegir-sama, for now please let it shrink."

Don't be too unreasonable.

"Aah-..... Ah-....."

Celia buries her face in my chest and lets out a long moan. She squirts in response to my further expanding meat rod.

"There is no choice. Let's pull it out!"

Excluding the fainted Catherine, the three of them try to hold Celia up, but my dick, as if responding to that, digs in even more and won't let go. Then, the stimulation from the rubbing on the inside caused me to ejaculate once again, inflating Celia's clean belly.

They tried several times to pull it out of her, but every time they tried, I started to ejaculate and Celia's belly inflated in size. My dick that has been digging tightly into her and can no longer be pulled out just using the strength of women. It is especially not good to have two pregnant women trying to use too much strength to pull. And if I were to forcibly pull out, Celia's insides would definitely get ripped apart.

"I-it's no good. It can't be pulled out..... Wait- what is it with this belly!? It's sticking out even more than that of the two pregnant women, isn't it?!!"

Celia's stomach has expanded to the point that it wouldn't be strange if she gave birth anytime now. If I poured anymore inside her, her stomach may burst open.

"Why don't we stop trying to pull it out, I'm sure he'll keep cumming."

"Wh-why did it become like this all of a sudden...?"

It's embarrassing to tell them about my own erogenous zone. For the meantime, I have satisfied everyone and that's all that matters. I hug Celia, who's in agony on top of me, and lay her head on a pillow.

"It's fine if I can't pull it out, isn't it? I'm tired from cumming repetitively. Good night."

If I just relax like this, my meat rod shouldn't expand anymore than this.

"N-no way, to sleep while it's still stuck inside her..."

I hug Nonna, who is mumbling something, and also bring the unconscious Catherine close. The two pregnant ladies are at my feet.

The bedroom has become quiet.

"I did it. I have him all to myself..."

Celia whispers to herself while rubbing her stomach, just like a pregnant woman in her last month of pregnancy.



The next morning

“Ah, good morning Celia. Is his penis pulled out yet?”

“...Yes, sorry for worrying you.”

Carla gives Celia, who is walking unsteadily with me, a rude greeting. When it became morning, it was amazing the instant my thing was pulled out when it shrunk. Celia was spraying my seed everywhere while screaming, which I kind of want to see again.

“Well, you were in ‘that’ state yesterday. Is your ass okay?”

Ass? I don’t remember what happened to her asshole though.

“Haah?”

“Well, you know, you were like ‘that’ just the other day, and if it loosened up it would be bad, wouldn’t it?”

“Don’t say it!!”

Carla teases Celia, and I grab the scruff of the neck of the pregnant woman to ask what she did.

“You see Aegir, you know Celia was hurriedly chasing after you after you left, right?”

As I thought, she was trying to run after me.

“And her health didn’t recover yet when she got on a horse...”

“Uwaaaa!! Mgghu!”

It sounds interesting so I cover up Celia’s mouth.

“After shaking us off when we were chasing her, as soon as she got on the horse, she froze and slowly got off.”

“Nnghho!! Nnnnnh!!”

“Did it leak?”

“It seems everything came out.”

“.....”

Celia sat down powerlessly and started crying. She did something pitiable. I'll care for her a little.

“If you want, would you like to do that next time? Although it would be in the toilet or bath...”

Celia is repeatedly pounding at my chest and when I pet her head, the door slowly opens and an awkward Adolph appeared. Celia instantly wiped away her tears and opened her eyes.

“Did you hear?”

“Hardlett-sama, it's about time I'd like to have an interview with that merchant. Well no, I didn't hear anything.”

“I guess. Sorry for keeping you waiting so long.”

“You heard it, didn't you?”

“Yes, you did, geez... anyways, I have narrowed it down to a few people who have the highest price, so when it is convenient for you I would like to invite them over. No, I didn't hear anything.”

“Yeah. But you have chosen them based on price, didn't you?”

“You definitely heard!!”

“Yes. But there are other factors to consider besides price, so I want to meet these few promising ones face to face and make a final judgement. Puuuh¹...”

“I don't mind though. I don't have anything planned so call them over whenever you

want.”

“Forget what you heardddd!!”

It seems our funds are rapidly decreasing, so we should hurry up and sell our stuff to turn it into gold. I hold down the rampaging Celia as Adolph leaves the room. Imagining her foolishness causes me to get turned on a little, maybe I should shamelessly tease her ass today.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Late Autumn

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 2100, Bow Cavalry approx 1200 (in training)

Assets: 3100 gold (-500 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest), Luna, Ruby

Children: Sue (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant; leaking), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt, Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 50, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 84

BUSINESS NEGOTIATIONS

–Aegir POV–

“Well, by all means, I kindly look forward to hearing a favorable response.”

The merchant, who is a middle-aged man with a protruding stomach, bowed deeply and left the room.

“.....”

“Although I don’t think I need to ask, what did you think of the Gulgord company?”

“No, rejected. I don’t feel like trading with someone like that.”

I drain the cup of tea that was on my desk and slam it back down furiously. Adolph sighed deeply.

“But, if you talk about merchants with status, most of them are middle-aged men. So...”

I interrupt what Adolph is saying.

“But it’s not like I commented because he was ugly or anything. Did you see his face? Clearly, he’s a greedy guy who’s rotten to the core.”

“I don’t think it’s appropriate to judge based on appearance.”

“Then, do you wanna bet? Whether he’s a virtuous person or a villainous person. I’ll take villainous and you take virtuous.”

“Well... in general, all merchants are greedy people. If they at least follow the conditions of the contract, we shouldn’t have any problems.”

“Then you should have just chosen a company from the beginning. I can’t trust that guy. That’s all.”

Adolph goes quiet, somewhat frustrated. He's the kind of man who would speak clearly about what he wants to say to the point that it gets under your skin. If he clams up like this, it means he just doesn't have enough confidence to insist on this company.

"But it can't be helped, since we can't just hold onto these goods for so long. We have no use for jewels and need to turn it into gold."

That is the part that gives me a headache. In the end, we have to find someone to make a contract with. Is there no beautiful female merchant who would say something like 'in exchange for my body, please trade with me'? If there was, I wouldn't mind if the price was 10% cheaper.

"Next is the Flitch company. Compared to all the merchant families up till now, it has inferior size and history, and is a medium-sized place, but to make up for that I believe that they will take care in dealing with us. The one who came looks like... the one in charge of the eastern region."

"Eastern region? You would put a person in charge of a rural area with few people?"

A merchant is an occupation where they need to be in an area overflowing with people and goods. In rural areas, it would be enough just doing business with peddlers; there's no need to purposely put a person in charge.

"It is probably a person who newly appeared as the head... or perhaps he was a fool and useless in his former position, thus getting demoted to this area?"

"...Looks like we can expect a lot from this one."

But appearances aside, it would be bad if we make a judgement based on our imaginations. For now, nothing will happen if we don't meet them first. I hope it's not a man with stinky breath though...

After we had the servants leave, there was immediately a knock on the door of the room. It's nice to be early, so I have a slightly better impression of you.

"It's the Flitch company. Is it alright for me to enter?"

Ooh, it's a woman's voice. That improves my impression of you considerably.

“Yeah, enter.”

“Please excuse me. I am here to present the evaluation from our company.....”

The woman who entered looked like a merchant and was wonderful. I didn't think it was real but an actual young woman came, not to mention she was beautiful too. Her clothes are fancy but not gaudy, and she had a mature charm about her. While properly hiding her body, the slit on her skirt and the exposure from her neck to her breasts was perfect; her clothes cause a sense of womanliness to drift about her without making her seem too vulgar.

But the female merchant opens the door and freezes in place while smiling all around. I check my own appearance, but it's not like my dick is out and it isn't hard and popping a tent in my pants. Perhaps the element causing her to freeze is that?

“What's wrong? Please hurry and come in.”

Adolph also has a dubious face as he urges her, but at that moment, Carla passes through the front section of the reception room. She glances curiously at the woman who opened the door and was frozen in place, then quickly shouts in a loud voice.

“Aaah—!! It's the ass woman from that time!”

“gh-!!”

Carla knows her? Ass woman... , ooh, I remember now! It's the woman besides Lucy who I've also dug in her ass from a while back.

“Sylia!?”

“It's Claire!!”

Right, it's Claire. Didn't she go to Stura when she ran away? I thought we would never meet again, but what a small world.

“An acquaintance of yours?”

“Yeah, a woman I've slept with before.”

“.....I will leave for awhile.”

Adolph sighs and gets up from his seat. Carla pushes Claire’s shoulder, shoves her in the room and gets her to sit on my interview sofa. At first, I thought Claire wanted to keep up her appearance and would politely decline, but Carla’s assertiveness and her large belly made her unable to resist, so she gave up and took her seat.

Claire definitely does not have feelings for me. Rather, it is not an exaggeration to say that she has hatred for me when we parted, but still, it’s more fun to talk to her than some unknown stranger of an old man.

“After that, various things happened to the both of us but... is your ass okay?”

“Is anything dripping out?”

“It’s fine!!”

It seems Claire thought about her choice of words for a second, but when she becomes defiant like this, business talks and everything else is finished, so she didn’t correct her way of speaking to something more polite.

“Haa... when I heard that I was summoned by a promising new Goldonian noble, I was excited, but why did it turn out like this...”

Claire drinks the tea on top of the desk with a look of resignation. Her actions are rude but her behavior is elegant and refined.

“I was also surprised that you became a merchant.”

I also loosen my clothes and relax my posture. I was told that if I dealt with things in an unsightly appearance, it would become a rumor and I would lower my own dignity, but I don’t believe that I need such formal appearances with an acquaintance of the past.

“Since that time, I’ve had a difficult time, to the point that I vomited blood... At that time, because you returned the money to me, I really didn’t become something pathetic and for that, I wanted to thank you.”

Claire lowered her head.

“So how did you become a merchant?”

Carla seems to be interested in the success story of her previous acquaintance as well. Even though she was demoted, it is not normal for her to be part of a mercantile house as well as be in charge of an area. To unite everything together, from the branch stores within her territory, the contracts with the peddlers and the enclosures of craftsmen using her own discretion and financial ability, those individual storekeepers don't even come close to reaching her level. It has been two years or so since she has separated from me and climbed up to where she is now, which should make for an interesting story.

“.....Do I have to tell you?”

“I want to hear about it.”

Claire resigned herself and started talking with a not-so-enthusiastic look.

“You see, Stura is a place where the merchants are powerful, and the government has little influence. Even in the Arkland war awhile back, the merchants wanted a base on this side of the river and put pressure on the government.”

I see, the merchants are the ones who move the country.

“That's why I thought I needed to become a merchant if I wanted to rise up in this place. I was accepted into the company by the current branch manager and... geez I'll say it!! I became his mistress and he had me look after the store! You're satisfied with that right?!”

I urge her to continue, as Claire finishes drinking her tea and keeps speaking.

“I was just a store clerk, but I burrowed through many different scenes of carnage, and even won several bets. Naturally, I had to work hard as well. I didn't know a single thing about being a merchant after all. Recently, I haven't been getting much sleep, and I don't know how many hundreds of books I've read either.”

That's true, since Claire used heavy eye makeup. She might have been trying to hide the bags under her eyes.

“I used the weapons exclusive to women too. I got on top of influential people and important customers, and even slept with each and every person within the company that I needed to, and it was a hell of a lot of work.”

“Using your ass?”

“Naturally it was properly from the hole in front! The only ones interested in digging someone in the ass are you guys!!”

Claire has gone through quite a bit to get where she is now.

“Every night I would swing my hips on top of fat guys and after they slept, I would study until the sun came up, and was finally able to get them to entrust a piece of land to me.”

“It’s a remote region like this though.”

Carla, with how things were going, you’re supposed to applaud her efforts.

“That’s right! Although I am still happy. If I’m in charge of an area, then my authority and responsibility increases. If I can succeed here, I’ll become an influential merchant and it won’t just remain a dream for me to go independent.”

I’m not too familiar in regards to being a merchant, but it seems Claire is dead set on rising up to form her own mercantile house eventually.

“I thought it would be a good opportunity to connect with an influential noble in this area where there is little demand too...”

“Well, I’m sorry about that.”

“Haah... Then I’ll be returning. It’s not like we’re acquaintances or anything, but I hope that you don’t make rumors out of the time you used my body or that I was a bandit in the past.”

After saying that, Claire got up from her seat, but I stop her.

“Why are you going back? We didn’t even talk about anything yet?”

“What do you mean why...? You won’t talk money with me when I was a bandit right?”

“Is a merchant someone who decides the results of things before listening to what the customer has to say?”

“In most cases, that’s how it is...”

Umu, next time I need to talk to a merchant, I’ll leave it to Adolph. I speak after recollecting myself.

“I didn’t say that I won’t make a deal with you.”

Claire opened her eyes wide.

“But...”

“If we’re talking about where we originated, it would be unnatural for me to be called a noble too.”

It may be an interesting discussion to see whether the status of a slave or a bandit is higher. This is a good opportunity, maybe I should also present my success story to Claire.

“If you talk about your personal history, you’ll seem old.”

I’ll tell her about the incident where Carla acted like a pervert and exaggerate it about three times then.



“I see... There was such a side to an incident like that.”

Claire was surprised when she accurately grasped what was going on, from the coup in Goldonia to the Arkland war.

“Well, it’s required for merchants to understand the current state of politics after all.”

Although it appeared as though my story about the war was exaggerated, it also acted

as something to lift morale.

“Ash was dominated overwhelmingly after all... Of course I know you’re strong.”

Claire looks a little sad. It seems that even with the passing of time, the fact that I sliced her beloved Ash couldn’t be erased from her memories.

“I’m not too worried about that anymore. I was able to advance to where I am because that happened... after having slept with so many men, I no longer have the qualifications to scold Ash’s killer for what he’s done.”

I approach Claire, who is looking down, and hug her shoulder, and just when I was about to give her a kiss, she pushes my shoulder away.

“Well, now that everyone’s back stories are out of the way, why don’t we start discussing business?!”

Unfortunately, it seems she won’t let me taste her yet.



“We already have a list of items to be sold. Now, we just need to determine how much extra will be added on top of the amount of gold that was presented earlier.”

Adolph has returned and has begun to hold negotiations with Claire, while Carla is taking a nap as she gently strokes her belly. It was hilarious how Adolph had to make sure Claire and I weren’t having sex before timidly coming back in.

“I’m sorry, but our company prices are at a comparatively high rate so if possible... I don’t want to perform any corrupt practices. Thus, the most I could add on would only be something like a courtesy charge.”

“Then your price may not be as competitive as the other companies, right? Plus, we’re a big customer so naturally we have many firms waiting for our business.”

“Well, that’s troubling. But for a company to buy these items at a higher price, will you be sure that they are a decent firm? Perhaps it is better if you confirm again if they may be a firm of swindlers.”

What an intense back-and-forth negotiation. If possible, I would like to enjoy some alcohol while watching, instead of this tea.

“I won’t be able to add anything further, but maybe you could purchase an item from our company at a relatively lower price to counterbalance the deal.”

“I appreciate the offer, but you don’t offer discounts on grain, right?”

“Grain has certainly shot up in price, and our company has not been able to stock up decently so it can’t be helped.”

Since it has been brought up, grain has definitely seen a huge increase in price lately. We bought it at a fixed price so the damage is small but because our population is increasing, we may not have enough if we were to consider the upcoming winter.

“If I may offer some advice, the items you are purchasing are weapons and armors, as well as items used in the army; there are many bulky items so transportation may be difficult. Please take that into consideration as well.”

“Your territory seems to be safe so I don’t believe that costs need to be expended for escorts though.”

“You won’t be able to pass through the Treian kingdom, so you’ll have to go around from Goldonia, right?”

Adolph and I stop moving. We both know about the current affairs with Treia, and how those items have been plundered from them. If that load is transported via the route through Treia, then there is a high chance it would get confiscated by them. If the shortest distance by boat is not taken, then the cost for using transport carts will also stack up, and the risk of encountering bandits and monsters will increase.

“So we will carry the weapons and items of that kind, so please charge an extra fee in proportion to the amount...”

Adolph is quite the excellent talker but sometimes he can be too nit-picky and annoy the hell out of the other party. In this case, you should not be asking for so much.

“Adolph, that should be enough, right? Why don’t you yield a little for the beautiful lady?”

In the future, I want Claire to be a trustworthy party I can continue to conduct business with. I don't want to have such tedious one-shot negotiations with different people every time I want to do business. Besides, if we yield a little, I might get something juicy in return later.

"The price is fine as it is. However, we will be the ones to escort you to the river. In return, you can add whatever you want on top."

This isn't just saving on costs. I can brag that it is safe within my territory, but I can't say the same for Erich's occupied territory. If by any chance Claire loses the cargo, she's done for. It may be a minus for us in terms of expenses, but it will also act as the perfect opportunity to get in some marching training.

"And if possible, I want to keep as much of the origin of these goods a secret. Especially from the concerned parties from Goldonia."

I've shown this stuff to a bunch of people so it isn't top-secret, but it's not something I want everybody to know about.

"Yes, naturally I would not blabber about a client's information."

Unlike how she was speaking previously, she is now using a manner of speech suitable for nobles. That may be her way of doing things.

"This is a different issue, but Fi... Fe... does the Fletch company produce its own weapons and armor?"

"It's the Flitch company."

"We do not produce our own, but many of the artisans do. If you so request, we will prepare them for you."

"We want to have compound bows. It'll be a considerably large amount so if you can make them, please let us know."

At the moment, we have given out all available bows gathered to the bow cavalry unit, but their sizes and design were all different so the shooting range for each one was dissimilar as well. For practicality, I want everyone in the army to have the same kind

of equipment if possible. Considering the tribes that we absorbed, we will need close to 5000 bows, and it's not an amount that Adolph or I can scrounge up from individual storekeepers or peddlers.

"Bows, is it? I understand. Depending on the amount, I will talk it over with the head office, so could you let me know the rough estimate of what you need?"

"Around 5000."

"...I will pass it along to the head office. However, if you're talking about the newly created compound bows, it is a considerably high value. No matter how much you lower the price, you will still need to pay quite a bit."

Hmm, I've already sold the goods and earned some capital, but is it still too early to purchase a large amount of items? In addition, the bow cavalry are still in training so I can't immediately dispatch them to the battlefield either.

"I see. Then shall I buy them at a smaller denomination and have them sent to us on a continued basis?"

In this case, we can prepare other goods to be sold; we can expect harvest and head tax next year as well.

"By all means, that is fine with me."

Claire's face lights up. Instead of having to pass it off to head office, she must be happier to handle the business in her commercial area herself and have it lead directly to profit.

When I glance slightly at Adolph's face, he remains silent but gives a small nod. It looks like he doesn't have a problem with these terms.

"My goodness, Hardlett-sama is weak against pretty ladies."

Adolph probably understands that when I conceded to the generous conditions, it is just a loan for Claire.

"Well, I hope that we can work together in the future, Viscount Hardlett-sama."

Claire bows deeply. From my point of view, I can clearly see the valley between her breasts, but it is definitely her intention for me to see. Even though I knew her intentions, my member still starts to harden.

“Since I believe that we will continue to do business together in the future, if you don’t mind, will you let me set up a shop here in Rafen?”

That is convenient for me. Claire, being the person in charge of the area, will not be staying permanently, but I’ll greatly appreciate it if I can contact her whenever I want.

“Then, the monthly tax rate is-”

“Don’t worry about it. Do as you want.”

“.....”

“-!? Thank you very much. I appreciate the special favor you have granted me.”

Claire expresses her thanks with smiles while Adolph glares at me. It seems I need to do something at the end. Good grief, negotiations are difficult. While being pierced with two opposing stares, Claire and I sign the contract.

Items Sold

Sets of Armor	2000 gold
Jewels	10000 gold
Ornaments	8000 gold

Items Purchased

Grain	2000 gold
Bows (500)	2000 gold

Balance

16,000 gold

Good grief.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Late Autumn.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 2300, Bow Cavalry approx 1500 (in training)

Assets: 18500 gold (-600 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs) (+16000 profit on sales)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest), Luna, Ruby

Children: Sue (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt, Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 50, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 85

PERSONAL BUSINESS NEGOTIATIONS

–Aegir POV–

Even after we finished discussing business, Claire continues to stay in Rafen. It seems like she's waiting for the wagons to arrive.

“Because my fate lies in this transaction, I will carry the load myself.”

A merchant also risks their life in a way, huh?

Claire is staying in my mansion right now. That's because there is no such thing as a high-class inn in Rafen. I have thought about constructing one, but only the foundation of the building exists. Thus, I had the VIP's stay in my mansion.

I was summoned by the aforementioned Claire, and when I dropped by the room I lent her, she entertained me with some expensive-looking alcohol.

“Go ahead, it's one of the highest class items ordered from the Federation.”

I take a small sip and the fragrance and taste were both wonderful. I don't mean to brag about my ability to judge the taste of alcohol, but I could tell immediately that this is an exquisite product.

“This is delicious.”

“I'm glad you enjoyed it.”

Adolph isn't here and there aren't any other people here either. I don't think there is a need to use particularly polite language.

“The day's about to end, but the noise and torch lights still don't disappear.”

When I glance out the window and give a quick sweep over the city, I could see countless fires wavering like fireflies and hear the sounds of wood being processed.

They are busy preparing the materials needed for the next day, working until the sun rises. Working under the light of torches is inefficient and the workers who do the night shift are paid higher wages, so I can't say that it's the best method to use, but it's more important that we have as many houses built before winter comes. However, due to the constant work, the residents in this town will need to stuff their ears with cotton whenever they go to sleep.

"When I asked them, it seems you're building houses for the citizens and offering it to them free of charge. May I ask what reason you have to do that much for them?"

Even if you ask me, I don't know the reason. It's not like I'm serving them either, so maybe it's to develop my territory? Stuff like this is Adolph's area of expertise.

"Other nobles would rather indulge in their own hobbies, and spend their fortunes on jewels, ornaments and gorgeous weapons and armor."

"I don't really prefer shiny things... And please keep those fancy looking armor and weapons away from me; it has value to me only if I can use it in battle."

"You mean that monstrosity of a spear? To swing that thing around, how much of a muscle-head must you be?"

Before I knew it, Claire was sitting down beside me, curiously feeling my arm.

"Pardon me. I was just curious."

"Do as you like."

I don't have a reason to dislike being touched by a woman. Claire continues to speak while she draws close enough to me that I could feel her breath on my skin.

"With this much construction, don't you need an ample amount of money, besides paying wages, to pay for the purchase of supplies?"

She knows about the wages I pay to the workers too, huh?

"If you let me handle it, I could bring you the completed components even without having to do this inefficient work at night."

Did you leave somebody out? It seems she doesn't intend to bring her head office into this conversation.

"I appreciate your offer, but it isn't necessary at the moment. The women and the weaker citizens will lose their jobs otherwise. It is one of the goals of labor to have them build themselves up after all."

In fact, the competition is quite high for the preparations of supplies at night. That's because it's one of the only jobs that the women can do.

"I see... And the large number of increasing soldiers, why are you reinforcing your army so much?"

"....."

"I'm sorry. I've been constantly straining my mind on a lot of different things these past two years so I've gotten curious about everything."

Claire lightly strokes my thigh while apologizing to me. Since the negotiations we had earlier, she's wearing relatively looser clothings so when she bends over, I can clearly see the valley of her breasts.

"It's not a secret or anything. You know about the conflict with Treia, right? This remote region has stuff like that going on too. If I don't have the military strength, I can't begin to accomplish anything."

"Then will you be continuing to expand your army in the future?"

"That looks to be the case."

"Will you be requesting me to arrange for the weapons, armors and other odds and ends for them too?"

Claire peeks at me with upturned eyes. I have been thinking about that too. I've been giving out the swords and spears to the soldiers from the spoils of war as long as they were the same size as the equipment everyone else was using, but things like arrows, wagons, carriages, and so on will be necessary if I were to expand the private army. When the time comes, if Adolph or I need to run around trying to gather this stuff, it would be a waste of time and also more expensive.

“Is that not possible?... maybe you’ve decided on a partner already...?”

Claire climbs on my knee and looks up at me.

“I haven’t decided yet. When it’s necessary, I’ll be counting on you.”

Claire’s face brightens up in a flash.

“Thank you very much! And I have a proposal, but the cost of the transaction... could you entrust me with a portion of the balance of 16 000?”

“Hm? What do you mean?”

If you buy something, you pay money, if you sell something, you receive it. Besides that, I don’t really get anything else.

“For example, if you have 10 000 gold, you would note it on a document without delivering me any of the actual money. And when you want to buy something from me, the cost will be subtracted from that document.”

Hm, is it something like lending?

“But what do I have to gain from this?”

“It would be a hassle carrying around large sums of money. If thieves were to steal it, you would suffer huge losses, but if you were to entrust it to me, you wouldn’t have to worry about that. It would be dangerous for us if we were to carry lots of gold too.”

Even though this neighborhood doesn’t have many thieves, I can’t guarantee its safety. It’s funny coming from me, who has stolen from a Treian noble, but the danger would lessen like this. But if that’s the case, wouldn’t it be a hassle to buy things from anyone other than Claire... Oh, so that’s her goal.

“If I do that, I wouldn’t want to buy from any merchant other than you.”

“...I will properly carry the goods to you when you demand it. Plus! If you entrust it to me, I will give you some discounts!”

I didn't have any big transactions with anyone other than Claire anyways. I think what she said is fine, but it made me want to mess around with her a little.

"But, it might not be so bad sleeping while surrounded by gold either."

"You're kidding, I can't see you having such a hobby."

Claire remains smiling as she sits directly beside me, but I can somewhat see impatience showing on her face. I said I was going to buy from her from now on too, so even if she has to give out some gold, it shouldn't hurt her that much. She shouldn't have any reason to be in such a rush.

"16 000 gold, huh? It's an amount I've never seen before so it would have been nice to see it at least once."

"...it goes without saying that those composite bows will be comparatively cheaper starting the next time."

It's weird if I think about it. Claire should have already sent the letter telling the supply wagons to depart. They are also bringing the gold for the payment so it would be quite the joke if she changes the price now. It's not like Claire herself would carry the large sum of money for a transaction she isn't sure would be successful.

When I stare into her eyes, I can see that underneath her smile, Claire has a look of restlessness similar to someone panicking to pay back some debt. I forgot that Claudia had easily brought 5000 gold with her, but if I think long and hard, 16 000 gold is an incredible amount of money. Even the merchants in the city don't usually carry that much on hand, so if the area that Claire's company is in charge of is in hard times... moreover, she just started in her new position and hasn't been able to get hold of a prominent customer yet.

"...If even I can see through it, you're still not good enough."

"Wh-what may you be referring to?"

"You've been acting confidently while taking a huge gamble. Are you not?"

Claire remains smiling while acting sheepishly and begins to sweat.

“Well, I can just contact the Fritch company and...”

“Please wait!”

Claire comes closer to me, almost smothering me. I was speaking while smiling somewhat so she should understand when I’m being serious or not though.

“It’s true we are trading partners. But before that, we are man and woman... don’t you think there is a method we can use to get us to trust the other more?”

Claire looks up at me, but I remain silent and spread open my legs. She dropped down from the sofa and went in between my legs, burying her face in my crotch. She rubbed the crotch in my pants with her face, then slowly lowered my pants with both hands.

“It’s already been two years. That time, you used this tool and fucked me lots.”

“Only the ass though.”

“Please don’t say it. It’s embarrassing.”

Using just her mouth, Claire skillfully played with the meat rod that sprung out. She wasn’t simply pleasuring me, but the appearance she had as she did so – looking up at me with a wistful look while sucking me – stirred inside me a man’s desire to conquer and protect. Her crimson lips repeatedly kissed my meat rod and enveloped the tip of my dick.

“How delicious... it’s not even comparable to that time.”

How many guys has she sucked since that time?

“It’s the reason for my love for you, Hardlett-sama.”

Like she’s one to talk, but it’s not a bad feeling having her service me while she says that.

“It’s so big... I’ve always thought it was like a log before, but compared to what it is now, it makes the one I saw back then look shabby.”

Claire once again puts her mouth on it and deliberately sucks me while making lots of

noise, occasionally taking it out of her mouth to praise its size. I know that she does this to flatter men, but when she services me so lovingly, I could easily misunderstand it as something else.

I hold her head down as she uses both her hands to rub my hips and takes me deep, all the way inside her throat. Pleasure starts to build up rapidly and I thrust out my hips unknowingly, but there was absolutely no resistance from her, only looking up at me with teary eyes instead. If she does that, I'll have no choice but to use less strength.

The service continues for a while, then I pull my dick out from her mouth, which was bending back so much it pretty much stuck against my stomach, and Claire got on all-fours.

"I've never seen such a wonderful tool before... The veins are all bulging out and it's emitting such a terrifyingly manly smell."

Recently, there have been many women who've praised my dick for being big, so because of that, I feel a little proud. I was going to put my hand inside her dress and pull down her underwear.

"There's no need for that."

Claire flips up her dress and reveals a black lace underwear. Right in the center of the underwear, where her most precious place is, is a large slit and if you spread it open, you are able to see directly inside of her.

"What a naughty woman. Did you intend to eat this little guy up from the very beginning?"

"It's because Hardlett-sama's charm as a man has melted my heart..."

I don't ask anything further than that and place my meat rod at the slit of her underwear from behind, touching the entrance of her vagina.

"My bluff was seen through, so for tonight, I am Hardlett-sama's slave... Please fuck me to your heart's content."

"I intend to do just that!"

I place both hands on her ass and thrust my hips forward. The thick tip spreads her insides apart as it entered.

“Aaah!! Amazing! My womanhood... my most sacred place is being dominated!!”

I try to push even further inside, but when it reached about halfway inside, it got stuck and it won't go in any further. Claire then grabs her butt cheeks and spread them apart with all her might. My meat rod slowly slips inside to the deepest part.

“It's in! All the other guys up till now have all been blown out of the water! From this point forward, I'm only yours, I'll only be your woman!”

While listening to Claire's sweet praises and moving my hips, I indulge in the sensations of her insides. Her hole is naturally secreting its own lubricant so it's very slippery and feels really good. She doesn't just squeeze down on me either; she combines the pulling and pushing of her body by clenching at regular intervals to further increase the pleasure given to me. These movements are clearly from a woman who knows how to please a man.

“Aaah, it's too thick... Move a little slower, will you? My hole will tear.”

“Hm? Is that so?”

I start moving slower and Claire was enjoying herself for a while, then began to complain abruptly.

“It's no good! Something is coming... Aaaah!! AAaaahh!!! Please thrust into me! Until I break!!”

She turns back to look at me and sticks out her tongue, as if pleading for me to thrust harder every time. She may have gotten more aroused while rubbing against me. When I imagined that was a result of my thing, it also made me feel good. So, I do just as she wishes, slam my hips hard against her, and she gets pushed around on the sofa, almost as if she was rolling around.

Even so, it's a fresh feeling to fuck a woman when she is still wearing her dress and underwear. While thinking that I should do this next time with Nonna, I grab both of Claire's hands and hold them in place so that she can't run away. I also use the other hand to massage her breasts and pinch her nipples, which causes her vagina to clench

around me in joy.

“Ah... it feels so good. Keep squeezing me just like that.”

“It’s also incredibly good for me! To be embraced by such a sturdy man and for it to feel so good, I’m really falling in love!”

She turns back to me with a fire in her eyes, so I take Claire’s lips with my own and continue to attack deep inside her.

“Hardlett-sama... I’m already about to cum.”

“Me too.”

“But I’m worried about the money issue... so the last spurt can’t quite...”

Claire has a dark look on her face as she says that and her hole relaxes slightly. In order to climax, I sought the stimulation to my member so I got on top of her while keeping her on all-fours with her back facing me.

“Don’t worry about that! I’ll figure something out, so focus here!”

“Thank you very much! Then I can freely... cum-!!”

Her shoulders droop down and she bends her neck while her vagina squeezes me so much that it almost hurts, then I also reach my limit.

“Uooo!!!”

No longer able to hold it in, I thrust my hips one last time before ejaculating with great momentum, pouring everything into her from the several dozen pulses of my dick. We look at each other while I was still cumming and kiss each other passionately.



After the long ejaculation ended, I lay down on the bed together with Claire, and enjoy my liquor as she uses my arm as a pillow. She then buries her face against my sweaty chest.

“That was the best.”

“It’s been awhile since I’ve felt so good that I forget about my work.”

It’s a man’s capacity to not mention that she’s telling a lie.

“In the end, how much money do you have on hand? How much should I entrust to you?”

“I can deliver 6000 and it’s already on its way.”

She tricked me. She’s gambling by giving me below half of the funds? She’ll fall into ruin one day.

“I’m a newcomer after all. If I do the same things that the others are doing, I’ll never rise above them.”

“You’re quite brave aren’t you.”

When I fondle Claire’s breasts, she takes a hold of my meat rod and starts rubbing it in response.

“Then I’ll leave 10 000 with you.”

“Thank you very much.”

I feel a jolt of pleasure on my chest as she licks my nipple. In response, I also slip a finger in her vagina, and rub the rough interior wall gently. After I released so much seed in her, that place was hot and slippery.

“Hey, Hardlett-sama...”

“You don’t have to be so formal with calling me Hardlett every time. Can’t you say it another way?”

When she calls me by my family name, it feels like I’m still doing work.

“Then... Aegir-sama... this may be extremely rude but, could I remove the honorific only when we’re in bed?”

“Yeah, do what you want.”

It doesn't even make me angry when a girl I sleep with addresses me without honorifics.

“My beloved Aegir... Please be affectionate with me from now on.”

Claire holds some liquor in her mouth and lets me drink it by transferring it to me mouth-to-mouth. Drinking such high quality alcohol with a beauty such as this makes it taste twice as good. I was ready for another round as I hug her shoulder, but she chimes in first.

“Aahn! Are you going to return to my hole? Why don't we talk a little longer? Since Aegir's thing is so big.”

It can't be helped, so I hold back. Although my meat rod is already standing tall....

“That reminds me, is that horse still doing well? The large black one...”

“You mean Schwartz? He's doing fine. He's still a mean woman-loving horse.”

“Oh my, ufufu. To be honest, I like horses very much. Recently, the eastern region of Goldonia has a considerable amount of horses out for sale... I was looking forward to finding the place where the horses were being raised, but I couldn't find it.”

Well, the horses aren't being raised here.

“The horses are being raised further east, in the mountain nation territory. They sell the ones that are unsuitable for riding.”

“...They are being bred in the territory of the mountain nation? No, that makes it sound like you've tamed them or something.”

Almost all of them obey me. There won't be any raids at this point in time.

“You're pretty spot on. They make horse meat out of the ones they can't ride. As expected, that is wasteful if you ask me, so I traded wheat to them, which is beneficial for both parties. We exchanged goods, so you merchants might not have much profit to gain.”

Claire smiles delicately, but her face gradually closes in on me.

“That area is full of unknown things to me so I’m pretty curious about it. Are there any other unusual things there?”

She has quite the adventurous heart.

“It’s just wasteland as far as the eye can see, and maybe some grasslands and waterfronts here and there. It’s quite hard to search around too... but it seems there’s an iron mine. Although it’s not really that rare, I guess.”

“Oh my, a mine?”

“Yeah, the quality is good too, but I can’t do anything about having to transport the iron ore all the way to the capital.”

Iron ore is an important item but ultimately still just raw material so the unit price is low. Besides that, it’s also heavy so it isn’t suitable to be transported such long distances. Adolph is thinking of some way to try and do something with it but there doesn’t seem to be a good idea as of yet.

“...If you refine it locally into a chunk of metal and then transport it... No, if all the towns collectively process it until the final product...”

Claire is muttering something.

“There won’t be any obstructions from the mountain nation, right?”

“Hm? Yeah, it should be alright in that area.”

Since we’ve found the iron mine, it isn’t that far away. The only tribes around there obey me too.

“I might be able to help you transport the iron. Please, by all means show it to me.”

Claire once again brings her face close to me. I kiss her, but she doesn’t flinch.

“Alright. But it’s not an environment that a city girl might consider comfortable, you

know?”

“I am a former bandit. Harsh environments are fine for me.”

Claire puffs out her chest, and her nicely shaped breasts jiggle. I can’t hold back any longer.

“Kyaa! Aegir is such a womanizer.”

“Are there any guys who would be able to resist this? Let’s do it entirely naked next.”

I strip Claire naked and slam my meat rod into her, savoring her high-class vagina. Our activities continue until I climax for the third time; Claire moans loudly and then faints.



-Third person POV-

“Claire-sama... are you alright?”

A voice from a young girl calls out to Claire, who was calmly sleeping on the bed.

“Yeah, I’m awake. How is Lord Hardlett doing?”

“Yes, he is in high spirits.”

Claire’s expression relaxes. She was able to properly satisfy the man and also able to resolve the issue with the money, so she shouldn’t have any worries.

“Good work.”

“It was amazing. He continued for an hour after that, I really thought that I was going to faint.”

Claire receives the water from the young girl and instantly finishes it.

“The problem with the funds is okay now. I was able to gain a bunch of useful information too.”

She lays sprawled on the bed and opens her legs wide. The young girl took a stick with a soft piece of cotton attached to the end and wets it, inserting it into Claire's vagina and wipes up the seed.

"What a tremendous amount... How much did he release?"

"You're right, it's amazing. At first, I thought he was urinating inside me."

In the past, Claire would grit her teeth and endure these kinds of perverted acts. When she was finished dealing with her customers, the young girl would smear ointment or oil on her and massage inside and around her genitals.

"Nnh! Laurie, do it carefully, 'kay? I really pushed myself today after all."

The two females have a master and servant relationship, but they also have a deeper bond than that. The young girl called Laurie was born as the daughter of a wealthy merchant family but one year ago, her parents made a mistake in doing business and went bankrupt. Having lost her place to live, she had to depend on Claire.

"You got stretched out quite a bit... Was it really that big?"

Claire raises her voice.

"It's not a matter of whether he was big or not. It's because it's the first time for my hole."

"He's an acquaintance of yours from the past, right?"

"It's nothing that exaggerated. He was pretty big in the past too, but now it's big enough that I'm starting to doubt whether it belongs to a human or not."

"Claire-sama's special place is an important negotiation tool after all."

"You're one to talk, Laurie."

Claire would use her body without hesitation when necessary to rise up in her profession or when she needs to complete a transaction, but it's the same for Laurie, since it isn't rare for her to share the floor on Claire's instructions if there are people with preferences for plain girls who look almost 15 years younger than them.

"I guess you're right. If it's necessary... with Lord Hardlett too."

"It'll be impossible for you. Your stomach will get torn apart."

The two of them laugh together. Laurie has slept with many men as Claire has instructed her to, but it's not like she has any resentment against her. In order for the two of them to succeed, they are willing to do anything if necessary.

Laurie was confident about her own quick wits, and Claire also recognizes that. She didn't feel like she was inferior in any way to the male merchants, but just by being a woman in the business world causes you to be at a disadvantage. In that case, there shouldn't be any confusion that she would use the weapons that women have to compensate for that. Luckily, Claire and Laurie both were born beautiful, so the effect it had was immense.

"Besides, it seems he doesn't have a preference for small girls like you. And he doesn't enjoy raping women either. He gets more turned on when a woman drowns in pleasure rather than when she gets embarrassed."

Claire explains everything she experienced in the earlier battle and Laurie notes it down. If the collection of preferences in this notebook is known to the public, nearly a hundred men would die of shame.

"He isn't interested in luxury goods. But one of his wives looked happily at the jewel sample so he might buy it. He treats weapon and armor in a practical sense so ornamental ones are prohibited. Also, he likes alcohol so bring more of that stuff... and most of all, women, he's quite the ladies' man."

"His mansion was filled with women too."

"His technique is first class, so an amateur won't stand a chance against him. Plus, he worries about you... so if the girl isn't careful, her heart will get captured too."

"He's a nice guy, isn't he."

"Yeah. But we can't become his prisoners."

"You're right. It's fortunate for us that he's such a womanizer."

“At one point, I didn’t know what was going to happen, but it seems I’ve won the bet again. It might be good to leave a regional office in Rafen too. This place will continue to grow.”

Claire stands up while still naked and looks out the window at the wavering flames. Laurie helps the standing woman into a nightgown from behind.

“It might be hard to believe, but it looks like he controls the movements and actions of the mountain nation too. The source of horses come from there as well.”

“No way... although it’s true I’ve heard that there were suppression battles happening around the area recently.”

Claire and her company have a precise information network but as expected, they aren’t able to reach all the way to the mountain nation’s territory. They could get a hold of when they left the area but they would be clueless about the undeveloped places.

“It looks like it wasn’t just suppression, but domination. I would need to confirm it, but if it’s true, then it’s an incredible feat.”

There are signs of merchants in any area you look around the central plains. Even in the remote regions where only peddlers go, if you trace back from the items sold by those peddlers to where they stock up, you will eventually reach a large company that is connected to them.

But there are exceptions. That is the mountain nation territory, where it’s the same for every nation – an unknown land. A completely blank area on the map. They have yet to discover the value of that area. It is considered a barren land dominated by barbarians.

“You were able to dig into Lord Hardlett too.”

“Yes, I’ve gotten his deposit, which essentially makes me his exclusive merchant.”

She wasn’t worried at all about the failed purchasings caused by the other companies the other day. Just a single big transaction doesn’t have that much significance to a major company. Although, the thought of Claire being able to connect to Lord Hardlett,

who controls an area with a promising future, alone was able to make her smile.

“This might be where our luck turns around.”

“Yes, this is the time we have to show what we’re made of.”

“The lumber to build houses with, and also laborers... even slaves will be fine so please supply them. Next, we will have to corral the weaponsmiths and armorsmiths. Eventually, we’ll need a large amount.”

“Yes.”

Seeing how Laurie is quickly writing up a letter, Claire continues on.

“I told you earlier that you might get torn apart, but depending on the situation, I’ll need you to sleep with him as well. So be prepared for it.”

“I understand, Claire-sama.”

“Also, do we have any good lubricants and something to relieve pain?”

Laurie stops writing.

“A lot of things happened in the past, you see. He seems to be interested in my ass so I thought it might be necessary to widen it... since at that size, with my asshole as it is now, it will get turned into something beyond repair.”

Laurie could not repress the admiration she had for Claire’s determination.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Winter.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 2400, Bow Cavalry approx 1800 (in training)

Assets: 18000 gold (10000) (-500 Continued expense for military preparations and domestic affairs) (10000 deposited gold)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (pregnant concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest), Luna, Ruby

Children: Sue (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (strategist), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 50, children who have been born: 7

CHAPTER 86

CHILDREN

–Aegir POV–

“Aaaah.....”

I sink my body into the hot water and relax, spreading out my arms and legs. I unconsciously let out a long sigh.

This season is the coldest out of the entire year, but it is especially cold today and snow is also fluttering around. To be able to get into a hot water bath at this time is the best feeling.

When I open the bathroom window, I could see what you could call the specialty of Rafen – the torch lights of the workers at night. It is nice to be able to view those hard-working people, who are desperately trying their best in the snow, from the side, but that is a privilege reserved for the feudal lord. I'll soak my head and warm it up too.

“～♪”

When I completely submerged myself into the water, the door opens and someone walks in while humming. Though with that said, the only people who could come in are the ones in my household. I wonder who it could be though.

“Hmm～♪ So warrm～ Baths are so nicee...”

“Onee-chan, don't go ahead without me!”

“It's because Ruu is slow. Why does it take you that long just to take off your clothes?”

The once quiet bathroom instantly got livelier. The sisters Kuu and Ruu are really close with each other as they eat meals and take baths together. I was thinking about something like that, but my breath is about to run out.

“Come on Ruu, hurry up and get in the water and wash yourself. You'll catch a cold.”

In the middle of Kuu's instructions, I raise my head out of the water and stand up. Kuu, who was bending over the water to dip her body in, placed her face in the exact position where my crotch would be.

"Eh... the water? Eh? Pe-..."

"You two are also going to take a bath?"

"...Pen-..... pe-..."

"Hawawa!"

Kuu fixes her gaze at the object that made its sudden appearance and froze in place. Ruu searches for a cloth to cover her body, but realizing there was nothing of the sort, she shyly used her hands to cover only her slit.



"Geez! Why were you hiding!?"

After regaining their senses, I listen to the two sisters complain after getting in the water. I wasn't really hiding, I just wanted to get my head warmed up and you just came in at a bad time.

"But now, we can finally get in together with Aegir-san after such a long time."

Ruu sits beside me and rests her head on my shoulder. She isn't hiding her breasts or her slit anymore. When I stroke her head, she acts bashfully, but seems happy.

"Uuu, even though we're of the opposite gender..."

On the other hand, Kuu wasn't able to relax at all. Rather, she's rather agitated after getting a glimpse of the thing hanging around my crotch area. It looks like she wanted to check it out nonchalantly, but it was quite obvious from my point of view. It is exactly as Nonna said.

"You want to see it? You could have just told me."

I stand up and show them my limp cock that droops down.

“Hihih! Th-that’s not-! I didn’t mean that!!”

Although she said that, her gaze doesn’t shift away.

“It’s natural for a woman to be interested in a man. Here, try touching it.”

I take Kuu’s hand and place it on my cock. Without averting her eyes, her hands gently caress it.

“It’s soft... even though it was really hard during the time you embraced my mom.”

“It’s because I’m not lusting after a woman right now... just earlier, it was squeezed dry by Catherine and Nonna.”

In theory, there are naked women beside me, but Ruu is still a developing child and Kuu is tightly covering her important areas.

“Geez! Even though mom’s stomach is finally getting bigger!”

“It’s about time, isn’t it? How is she doing?”

“Well, it looks like she’ll be fine. She’s having an easier time than when she had Sue. I honestly think it’s because Aegir-san is by her side...”

The two of them discuss how they wish a healthy child would be born. However, it’s a strange situation to talk about children while having my cock held like this.

“Do you want to see it get bigger?”

“Eeeh!? No way, it’s not like I want to see... but.”

She absolutely wants to see it. I unwrap the hand that Kuu was using to hide her breasts and gently massage them. They’re definitely not big, but she isn’t flat either. Their size is perfectly large enough to fit in my hands and it has the elasticity that only youth could provide. Just from seeing how her nipples are already getting hard may be enough to get my member aroused. Kuu tries not to show it but she’s surprisingly lewd.

“Ah! Nnh! It feels good... Uwaa..... it’s getting all plump and expanding.”

My cock is pulsing and gradually getting larger, eventually getting completely erect. The meat rod towers over Kuu at a 45 degree angle and casts an intimidating shadow.

“It became rock hard in no time at all...”

I draw closer to the surprised Kuu and drag the erect penis from her face to her neck.

“Hey Kuu, is it about time you try taking me inside?”

Kuu doesn’t give an answer, but gets up from the water and places her hand on the edge of the bathtub.

“Uuu... well, something that big won’t fit...”

“A woman’s body is made for that. Let’s test it out.”

I hug her from behind and place my cock at the entrance of her slit, pushing it in. The tip is pressing against Kuu’s slightly puffed up genitals and is just about to penetrate her, but Kuu distanced herself from me.

“I’m sorry! It’s scary!!”

“Really?... Alright.”

Kuu is genuinely scared. The loss of her virginity will be postponed.

“Then, could you at least calm this guy down.”

I had Kuu sit on the edge of the tub as I draw close to her. When she rubs it with her hands, I bring her closer and stick my thing right in front of her face.

“W-with my mouth??”

“Would Ruu like to join in as well?”

“Hawawawa!!”

The mood where her sister and I were about to do something sexual causes Ruu to sink her face halfway into the water while she watches. Since she's here, why not get her to participate as well? She's still just a child, but it should be fine if I only get her to lick it.

"Well, I'm counting on you."



"Nnh... Ruu, I'll leave the tip to you."

"Kay, kyaa! It twitched!"

I sit on the edge of the bathtub and the two sisters start sucking my dick while still in the water. That way, they won't get cold. It should be the first time that the two of them perform oral sex but maybe because they're sisters, they are perfectly in sync with each other.

Kuu is quite shy but fairly bold in her sucking and I can't get enough of Ruu's tiny tongue as well. It might be nice to periodically get these two siblings to service me.

"Nnh-! It's hard."

"Nnnnh! So big."

The only unfortunate thing is that I can't have them envelop me with their mouths. I'll have to train them and get them to practice enough so they can take me in all the way to their throats.

It was rather weak stimulation, but the service continues for 30 minutes and my meat rod is starting to twitch as if begging to release what was being stored.

"I'm cumming, suck on it from both sides."

I hold the heads of both sisters and push my meat rod against them, then look up at the ceiling. The two of them feverishly sucks my penis, even sucking at the base, and stroke it using their tongues. I instantly felt something hot like magma rising up from my balls. It was also transmitted to the girls while they were sucking me, and they

open their eyes wide in astonishment.

“Ooohh!”

“Kyaa!!”

“Wah! It came out!!”

Accompanied by splurting sounds, the semen flew everywhere, dirtying the sisters' faces, dripping to the bath water and even sticking to the ceiling.

“Don't stop! Keep licking a little longer!”

The sisters separate their mouths from my rod when they were shocked at my ejaculation but I hold their heads close until the end of my eruption. The discharge was caused by weaker stimulation, but it was still a lengthy emission. After everything was fired out, my meat rod droops back down, as I also sink back into the water.

“Aaah..... that was good.....”

“My face is all sticky...”

“Waa~ it even reached the ceiling...”

A while after that, we relax in the water, and I get out from the bath first.

“It's pretty cold, so stay in there for a moment.”

“Oh yeah, there weren't any clothes in the dressing room. That's why I thought nobody was here.”

“That's because I came here naked. Straight after embracing Nonna and the others.”

“...So you're going back naked too?”

“I'll be doing it with Celia next.”

““ ””

I exit the dressing room while the siblings give me resigned stares. No matter how they look at me, being stared at by women is a nice feeling.



After a while

“You can’t do any farming during the winter season so many people have gathered to do labor~”

“Wow, that’s nice.”

“The bow cavalry is finished with their basic training~”

“Is that so? That’s nice.”

“Previously, the applicants for the private army were increasing, but the balance with the population is~”

“Hooh, that’s nice.”

““You aren’t even listening!””

Adolph and Celia both shout at me. The reports were just too dull so I was about to fall asleep. Leopolt actually left on his own, basically determining that I’ve given permission to him since there was no complaints from me.

“The point is that there aren’t many changes, and it’s the same situation as usual, isn’t it? It’s fine if you don’t make such an effort to report everything to me.”

“We can’t do that. In the first place, it’s Hardlett-sama who selfishly agreed to make a deposit to the Flitch company that our freedom of purchasing is...”

Adolph’s explanation is unnecessarily long. The domestic affairs official essentially requires one to have many long and useless banter though.

“You understand? When purchasing goods, we buy from a range of locations so that the risk of interception decreases...”

Right at that moment, light stepping sounds and heavy footsteps come from the corridor. The door of the office was opened without even a knock. The one who came in wasn't Pipi or Carla, but rather one of the maids and was shouting loudly without so much as giving me any kind of greeting.

"Mel-sama is going into labor!!"

"Adolph, tell me later."

"It can't be helped."

Celia doesn't object either and follows me in a light jog. When I head to the living room, Mel was being supported by a maid and Sebastian and was being carried to the bedroom. It was already close to the time she might give birth so I had a midwife stay with us permanently.

"...Aegir-sama... the baby is finally-"

"Yeah, I know. Do you want me to accompany you?"

"No, when a woman gives birth, they become like an animal... you shouldn't look."

"Is that so? Then I'll stay here. Go do your best."

Mel heads to the bedroom covered in cold sweat. The door was closed and there was a strange silence encompassing the front of the room. Carla, who has a similar large belly, looks on worriedly while Nonna closed her eyes to pray for Mel's safe delivery. Irijina and Celia were also just as restless somewhere else in the house.

Giving birth is a huge, life-threatening task. Everyone is nervous and Rita was just about to prepare water and a light snack in anticipation for the long haul. But just 10 minutes after Mel entered the room, I could hear the cry of a baby.

"Hm? Has the child been born?"

"Eh? The water hasn't even gotten warm yet."

But the midwife opens the door to greet me.

“It is a healthy little girl. It must be god’s intervention that it was such a safe delivery.”

“Hurry and get the baby’s first bath! Is the water not ready yet?”

It was such a sudden birth that the baby’s bath will need a little longer before it’s ready.

“Mel, are you... tired?”

“Ufu, honestly, I’m not that tired. Is the baby healthy?”

“Yeah, looks like she’s healthy.”

“Thank goodness... Another girl, so when all four of them are together, it will be very lively in the future, I’m sure.”

Because it was an extremely short delivery, Mel’s face doesn’t look fatigued. I give the woman, who’s smiling while holding the baby girl, a light kiss and leave the room. It seems best to give the mother some space immediately after childbirth.

“A little girl, huh?... it’s amazing that there are four of them.”

“I’m so glad that mom is okay...”

“We’ll have to think of a name for her.”

“That’s where I, as the legal wife, comes in..... so how about Ekaterina?”

“Kuu, Ruu, Sue, Ekaterina? You don’t have much of a naming sense, do you.”

The kids are also making a fuss, throwing out names at random. Whatever the name is doesn’t matter; Mel is also satisfied at the fact that the child has been born without any complications. Just when the servants were about to present alcohol in celebration, a groan can be heard.

“Uuuurgh... ooww, it hurts... what is this... my stomach is...”

When I look, Carla is crouching down and holding her stomach. Everyone instantly turns to look at one another.

Once again, everyone starts running around, the midwife is called from Mel's side and takes Carla with her. It wasn't expected that she would give birth on the same day, so the room preparation hasn't been done yet. The maids were also grabbing sheets and a bunch of other things and are running around hastily.

"At the same time?... which means that they got pregnant at the same time when I was doing them together?"

"Please don't say something so vulgar at a time like this!"

Nonna, who was making jokes about Carla earlier, is pretty shaken and lost her composure at Carla's sudden change in expression. Unlike Mel, it is Carla's first childbirth, so it might be a little painful for her.



That's what I thought, but after 30 minutes, the midwife comes out carrying a baby girl. It was such a safe delivery that it made me doubt whether she actually gave birth or not; even the midwife felt it was a little anti-climactic.

"The path for the baby to come out was quite wide so she was able to pass through easily."

I wonder what she's referring to.

Nonna and Rita look at each other.

"Well, the size of the baby's head is about the same... right?"

"It's been going in and out of her, right?"

It seems they were discussing something together.

In any case, my family has increased by two. Mel's child is named Miu, and Carla's child is named Ekaterina... as expected they get along well.

"Not yet... I still have the opportunity to give birth to an heir!"

It seems Nonna is finally getting serious.

The hard part is what comes after. I didn't really intend to spread rumors about my child having been born, but Sebastian said it was common to write a letter to your close acquaintances unless it was an illegitimate child; thus I only sent a message to Erich.

When I did so, nobles and merchants, whose names I don't even know, had come to deliver me celebratory gifts one after the other. The eccentric things included the song celebrating the birth and the celebratory wine placed in the cellar that was accompanied by a title deed. There was an idiot who asked for marriage with a three year old son, and even worse, there was a bigger idiot who wanted to get engaged with me while she was pregnant with a possible son.

"It isn't unusual for them to decide on you as a marriage candidate right after there has been a birth though?"

I was talking to Nonna about the idiotic things that those nobles were doing, but she replies in an indifferent manner. It seems I'm not able to keep up with the noble society.

In the first place, Erich is to blame for spreading the rumors. The next time I meet him, I'll cause some trouble for him.

"If that's so, then you don't have much time to spare."

Celia comes to my side. She's cute so I stroke her face and head.

"Waah! My hair!"

She must have done something to her hair; then I did something bad to her. Celia fixes her hair and then continues further.

"Just a little earlier, didn't a messenger come? There will be an assembly in the spring. The direct orders from the King were to bring your troops to the capital for the large training exercise in spring."

Is that so? The season is already close to spring. I'll have to summon the bow cavalry to the assembly as well. It's been a while since I've been to the capital, so I can also see Melissa and Maria too. Let's put the issue with Erich to the side for now.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Spring.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry approx 3000 (in training)

Assets: 13000 gold (8000) (Military Materials -2000 gold) (Labor Cost -3000)
Winter~Spring

(Remaining deposit: 8000)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Yoguri (house guest), Luna, Ruby

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: (Melissa X Maria), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (strategist), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 50, children who have been born: 9

CHAPTER 87

A TRIFLE IN THE CAPITAL

–Aegir POV–

“All troops, commence your marching!!”

By my order, the mass gathering of troops on the outskirts of Rafen begin advancing to the north. In accordance with the the king’s order, I am mobilizing my army to participate in the spring training in the capital. Only during this time, the work around the town has stopped and adults and children alike scrambled to climb to high places to watch over the army. Just a few guards are left in the city.

“If we were to get attacked while you are absent, wouldn’t there be absolutely no survivors left?”

“If there are bandits, even the incomplete city walls will be enough to obstruct them. If it’s Treia, then they’re extremely foolish. The army of the entire kingdom is gathering to hold a training exercise, so to attack during that time is utter madness.”

Even if we could respond as an entire country, it would be a great loss if they burned the city down. Besides, Carla and Mel are left there too.

“Chief... I mean, Viscount-sama, if danger arises in your territory, our warriors will rush over, thus please be at ease. We will definitely protect your children and wives.”

In the case where there are enemies whom the guards are unable to deal with, the mountain nation will use all their efforts to reinforce them, and in the worse case, my family has promised me that they will escape. I have no choice but to trust them at this point.

“It’s been awhile since we’ve visited Melissa and the others.”

“I’ve also asked them to take care of me...”

Nonna and Catherine are riding on a large carriage in the center of the army. The only

ones that are not accompanying us are Carla and Mel, since it hasn't been that long after they've given birth, and their daughters.

The main purpose of this exercise is not simply to fulfil a military objective, but its aim is also to gather the nobles who are typically holed up in their territories and get them to show their faces. Since I'll be returning for a reasonable amount of time, I decide to take my family along with me.

"Previously, when we had to move Nonna and the others to the territory, it was unbelievably troublesome, wouldn't you agree?"

"Pipi doesn't know about it!"

At that time, we were attacked by the mountain nation, but right now, they are our allies. In addition, the amount of their soldiers we brought along reach 8000 in number. It might be safer here than to remain in the city.

"Aegir-sama, I have taken stock of our squad this time. It would be embarrassing if you are unable to get a hold of the situation during the exercise, so please remember it, 'kay?"

Celia hands me a neat chart with the organized formations. There are individual differences between the use of their sentences and it's quite amusing.

Leopolt would have just written the minimal amount on his documents which gave off a feeling that he wanted me to understand what he wrote even without the explanation, causing me to get annoyed.

Adolph politely explains things in his documents but he would really explain things in details so it could get quite lengthy. The way he points out my small mistakes and my clumsiness gets me annoyed just as much.

90 percent of Claudia's letters are useless and there is practically no content in them. It doesn't get me annoyed but it dampens my mood. Nonna has a similar trend too... Recently, Nonna has been in a hurry to get children so I'm worried that she's becoming more like Claudia.

With that in consideration, Celia's writing is well organized, it doesn't contain any strange sarcasm, and I can read it without getting upset. However, there are occasions

where she leaves out some crucial parts.

“You’re about one step away, I guess.”

“? What do you mean?”

I glance at the formation chart while petting Celia’s head... oh, a misprint.

Eastern Independent Army

Troop Count 2000

Infantry 1200, Archers 300, Spearmen 300, Heavy Cavalry 200

Private Army

Troop Count 3000

Infantry 1500, Archers 500, Spearmen 700, Heavy Cavalry, 300

Bow Cavalry

Troop Count 3000

Bow Cavalry 3000

Supply Squad

Large wagons 50

Total of 8000 in the great army.



Actually, there was a dispute with the mobilization of the bow cavalry. The leaders of the mountain nation could not understand the meaning of training exercises.

“Exercise? What is that?”

“Is it not a fight?”

When I was thinking about how I could explain it, Pipi, who has gotten accustomed to our way of living, explains in my place.

“In the plains, there are other chiefs who have many warriors under their command. They will gather together and train for battle. If you don’t bring enough warriors, they

will make fun of you as a weak chief.”

“What?! That isn’t good!”

“Then, we will gather the entire tribe and have them go along to show the greatness of our chief!!”

Please stop. If the capital finds out that there is a mass migration of tribes, it will be more embarrassing for me than having fewer soldiers.

“There is no need for that. It isn’t meaningful just to bring numbers; they also need to be skilled warriors. If they go through training and are given equipment, 3000 will be enough.”

“Is that so...?”

“If you bring all the warriors with you, you can get double the amount though.”

I’m grateful, but their armors don’t match and I don’t want to have warriors running around wearing pelts on their backs.

“Would 3000 cause you trouble in terms of food?”

The warriors of the mountain nation have a duty to kill prey and be hunters as well. If I mobilize too many of them, it may hinder their lifestyle.

“The lame horses that the chief has traded to us will serve as food. We won’t starve.”

“We can manage somehow if half of the warriors stay back.”

Then it’s settled.

“So, would it be alright to have about 100 women wait on you during this training or whatever?”

“You fool! It’s a gathering of powerful beings! It won’t look good if he doesn’t bring at least 300 with him!!”

If I have 300 of the mountain nation’s women surrounding me as I enter the capital,

rumors will spread about how I'm some sort of barbarian king. After that, the leaders were somehow calmed down, I took the agreed number of warriors with me and we managed to depart.

"Even so, that girl seems happy."

Pipi runs up in between Celia and I with her horse. Celia... she's really emitting some serious murderous intent now.

"She'll surely become the chief of the next generation."

The girl Pipi is talking about is the one that discovered the erogenous zone on the nape of my neck.¹ When I dropped by to mobilize the troops, she came running while holding her large belly. It seems that she wanted me to name the child, so when I listed names of boys and girls, she returned extremely happily.

"Pipi also wants the chief's child."

"I would be somewhat honored to receive a child too."

Even Luna wedges herself in here. She is more skilled than Pipi as a warrior, and furthermore, she has higher leadership ability, so I had her manage some of the bow cavalry. Those guys won't listen to orders from outsiders besides myself anyways, and if Pipi is the captain, she might actually interfere with our tactics.

The eastern independent army will be under my direct control, while the private army will be commanded by Irijina. However, since this is actually a hybrid composition, most of it will be managed by myself. Leopolt is the staff officer and Celia is the adjutant.

The expressionless staff officer who got on his horse, and the adjutant, who somehow manages to push Luna out of the way, both look at me. They've given me quite the overhyped role.

It would take a considerable amount of time along the path to the capital to march together with the infantry, but once we got on the maintained highway running through Erich's territory, it became a lot smoother.

"It even stretches up to here?"

“If this extends all the way to our territory, then logistics will instantly improve in speed.”

Leopolt did not speak beyond his field of expertise, but if this highway gets connected, then the exporting of iron will finally become realistic. Claire is getting pretty annoying with her pleas to extend the path and her demands for the royalty to get to work.

“Is everything alright in Erich’s territory though?”

From what I can see, it isn’t as catastrophic as Treia, but the citizens plucking the weeds in the wheat fields are depressed and skinny.

“It can’t be helped. Everyone isn’t as blessed with funds like Lord Hardlett is. Try excluding the funds you loaned from that madam and the gold you gained from the plundered goods.”

Indeed, I would be fairly in the red.

“But the morale of the guards are that low too?”

There isn’t anything you could call an army in Erich’s territory. That’s because I’m supposed to be dealing with things like bandits and barbarians for the both of us. However, I can’t watch over every little thing that happens on a daily basis such as petty crimes and thieves. That’s why there are supposed to be people who resemble guards but...

“As soon as they saw us, they abandoned their spears and raised their hands in surrender.”

It’s comical to see them surrender to their allies, who are just heading to the training exercise, but if we were actually enemies, even if they deemed it impossible to fight against us, they should have at least ran away to tell their commander.

“I’ll have to say something to him about this, plus the thing about spreading news about my kid being born too.”

“Although, I think they’ll just come back with twice as strong a group as the previous

conflict.”

What an indescribably irritating feeling. I pick Pipi up from the horse beside me and sit her in front of me.

“Nuuha! Chief, don’t rub my face around like that. It won’t go back to normal!”

When Pipi struggles, my dick pushes up against her ass. Pipi, Ruby and the others from the mountain nation all have such tight bodies, and it’s fantastic. When I have the chance, it might be nice to follow the leaders’ suggestions and spray my seed in a 100-women orgy.

“Aegir-sama, something’s heading our way from the west.”

Several fancily-dressed knights cross over the hill and head towards us.

“You look like a Goldonian noble participating in the training exercise!”

“I’m Hardlett. And you are?”

The knights bow and then start their speech.

“We are the knights of Viscount Ordone! We are also on the way to the capital and came here to forewarn you. Our troops are using the highway first, so please standby in this area momentarily...”

At that time, the trotting group of bow cavalry overtakes me and the knight from behind. The road up ahead gets better so I gave them the orders to arrange themselves into ranks in the front. There should be about 1000 of them. I couldn’t hear the knight’s words due to the sound of galloping horses on both sides.

“Salute!”

While they are passing beside me, the soldiers brandish their swords. After a few minutes in which the roar of their hooves continue, they finally pass us by.

“Sorry about that. So, what were you saying?”

“...I pray for your safe travels to the capital.”

The knights leave. What was that all about?

“Noble families are also concerned about things like who will yield on the roads. Things like pedigree, the authority of your family and the strength of your backing is also very important.”

I talk with Nonna, who sticks her head out from the window of the carriage, as we pass the knights of Viscount Ordone, who stare at us with complicated expressions, on the side of the highway. I just hold up a hand as a sign of apology but the knights from earlier seem to make a face like they swallowed some bitter worms. What weird fellows.



Capital, Goldonia

“Welcome back, Master.”

“Long time no see, Melissa, Maria. No need for those formal greetings.”

I stroke Melissa’s ass and take her lips when she greets me at the entrance.

“Geez! She made such an effort to give you a refined greeting too!”

Maria, who was clinging to Melissa, got upset, but she gets a kiss and an ass-rubbing too. I need to remind Maria of a man so that she doesn’t fall completely into the depths of lesbian love.

“Ah! Aaah, don’t!!”

As soon as I slip my finger into her vagina, Celia put a stop to it.

“Aegir-sama, don’t you have to go to the palace first?”

Oh yeah. First, I’ll place my troops in the garrison and then drop by the palace to confirm my participation in the training exercise. Erich also told me not to go one round at home before coming. So, while Nonna and Catherine were in the middle of entering the house, I reluctantly get on Schwartz.

“.....”

I won't pay attention to the reason as to why Celia is riding in front with me. I'll just continue to stroke Celia's head as I slowly advance to the capital on my horse.



In the palace, the nobles are bustling as they gathered together. They are probably waiting to be ushered in for an audience with the King. Among those nobles, I spot Erich.

“Lord Radhalde, I have something to tell you...”

I call out to him to complain about spreading the news about my child, but he speaks over me.

“Lord Hardlett, you overdid it.”

“Huh?”

“I'm talking about your troop count. Is there anybody who would actually bring 8000 with them?! Even a margrave only brought 3000. You're just a Viscount so you don't have to do so much... From what I can see, you also brought the eastern army with you, but would things be alright in terms of security!?”

I get hit by a flood of words. I wonder what's wrong.

“It's no problem. I brought the king's army with me to participate in the training exercise, but the reserve forces that I left in my territory is sufficient to deal with the maintenance of safety. Just the other day, they conducted a plan to suppress the barbarians and the threat has declined.”

In reality, those reserve forces are the aforementioned barbarians though. As a result of talking with Adolph and Leopolt, I decide not to report that the barbarians have been completely subjugated.



The next day after I slept with Claire ²

“Adolph-san, I heard that there is a promising iron mine in the mountain nation territory. Moreover, they have been subjugated and there are no longer any obstacles... I heard it from pillow talk, but if we talk about it too much, it won't benefit either of us. Please exercise caution in the future.”

I've been warned as such. In her perspective, she wouldn't want to increase the number of rivals. And it's not like I wanted to tell a lie. But I didn't actually win over all of the mountain nation, since there are a few tribes in the corners of the territory that I couldn't subjugate. Therefore, saying that I've completely dominated them is technically a lie, but let's just leave it at that.



“So you still had reserve forces? I was told by His Majesty that it's fine to freely grow your numbers in the private army but there is also a limit to that...”

Erich's scolding continues, but I just reply meekly and let his words run in one ear and out the other. I secretly extend my hand out to my side and grope Celia's ass. Since she is unable to let her voice out, she endures it with a flushed face.

“That reminds me, while I was coming here, I saw that your residents are facing considerable poverty.”

“What a forthright person. Well, you're not wrong there. They have still not been able to recover from the chaos of the war. I know that it's painful for them, but I can't reduce the tax more than what is necessary.”

“Isn't the acting official doing as he pleases?”

“The previous guy who was taking extra tax and lining his own pockets has been judged but... his successor may also be committing injustices to a different degree. Either way, I haven't been able to leave the capital often enough to check on those issues.”

“Are you that busy?”

“It’s partly due to the conflict you started and its aftermath.”

If I continue to joke around, I may say too much. I feel sorry for the citizens of Erich’s territory, but I can only hope that he pays a little bit more attention to them.

“Lord Radhalde, Lord Hardlett, the King desires to meet with you. Please come this way.”

One of the ministers summon us and allow us to enter the room. Just when I’ve gotten Celia to the brink of climax too. I pull the finger out from her wet hole and follow Erich.

With the customary greeting to the king, I use words I don’t typically use and lower my head.

He was astonished at the number of troops I was leading, applauded me for the victory against the barbarians, and warned me about the unsuitable number of troops proportional to my social standing. In summary, that was all that happened.

“As soon as the feudal lords gather, we will begin the full-scale training exercise. I believe it goes without saying, but this exercise isn’t just about military purposes but rather its main objective is to show off the power of the army to the surrounding nations and to the people. I ask that you do not show any shameful behaviors.”

““Yessir!”“

I can see the King seemingly having a tired look. The territory nobles possess vast lands and there are many of them who have the power to unite the surrounding nobles. To call every one of them and ask them to get along with one another must have been troubling. Each of them had to be summoned one-by-one and greetings have to be done, and banquets and balls have to be held everyday. Although the King has increased his authority far greater than that of the previous King’s, he isn’t foolish enough to start a dispute with an influential noble for a nonsensical reason.

“If it were me, I’m sure I would be somewhat foolish though.”

“What are you talking about?”

“It’s nothing really.”

Well, let's return home and mingle with Melissa and Maria. Catherine should be running out of patience too.

"Lord Hardlett! I heard that your child was born the other day, I'm glad everything went smoothly!"

"....."

"I'm really fortunate to have met you here. I'm actually holding a banquet at my mansion tonight. Since it's been so long that you visited the capital, please by all means join me to deepen our friendship. Count Radhalde as well as Lord Hardlett, if you don't have any plans tonight, please kindly....."

It seems I'm not as foolish as I thought.



Night

On the way back from the banquet, I enjoy the evening breeze, while only Nonna gets on the carriage back home. At first, Nonna wanted to dismount as well, but I persuaded her that it isn't the best idea for a beauty like her to walk around at night, even in the capital. I didn't particularly think to search for a prostitute on the street.

"Aahn, amazing! I've never had such a sturdy noble!!"

"How about here?"

"Your huge spear is inside mee! It's so deep that it's painful! But it feels so good!!"

By chance, I found a prostitute desperately begging me to buy her, so this was just due to me getting affected by her emotions. I didn't have much time though, so we did it standing up in the back alley, using rough thrusting.

"I'm about to cum. Is it fine to let it out inside?"

"Inside is, a little troublesome. But if you add another silver coin..."

In the end, I stuff one silver into her breasts without saying anything, thrust my hips up and ejaculate. The woman's legs float up and she starts to tremble as my meat rod pulses.

"Aah, your seed is flowing in... I might have been impregnated by the huge cock of a noble."

I have a bunch of sexy ladies at home, but sometimes it's nice to enjoy snacks like these outside.

"Uuu, I can't stand. Could you please take me to the tenement house over there..."

I accompany the prostitute, whose legs had given out, to her home and in return, she services me by cleaning my dick with her mouth. This happened on a whim so it got late without me noticing. If I don't get back home soon, I'll make them worry.

"Stop it!! Noooo!!"

I hear a woman's scream and the sound of cloth ripping, then there was a sound of something being hit. At first I thought that it was another prostitute that brought a customer to the back alley, but the scream didn't sound normal. Eventually, I guess her mouth must have been blocked, but the sound got muffled. I should probably confirm it instead of assuming things from the sounds.

"Stop it! Let go of my sister!"

"Shut up, you damn kid, you want to get punched again?!"

"MMnmh—-!!"

"Kuuh~ Feels damn good. This one's a keeper!!"

If that's some sort of play, then she might get turned off if I intervene, so I pop my head out and sneak a glance at them; it appears there are four men who are treating two women roughly.

One of them is probably the younger sister, and she's lying face down on the ground while being stepped on. There are bruises on her face.

The other one is the elder sister who is on her back and one of the men is riding on top and raping her. The other men, besides the one holding down the younger sister, is smiling while the man shakes his hips. Unfortunately, it doesn't seem like they're playing around.

"Hey."

"Haah? Gyah!"

I grab the man who is raping the older sister by the hair from behind and pull him backwards with all my might. The man's dick is pulled out of the girl and he continues moving backward until he hits the wall behind him. There is lots of hair ripped out from his scalp remaining in my hand. Sorry, but you might go bald.

"W-what's your problem, you bastard! The hell you think you're doing?!"

"You wanna get beat up?!"

The remaining three men are cursing at me, but they're sneaking around at the back of the alley, not to mention they ganged up on women to rape them, so their words are not worth paying attention to.

"Take your foot off that girl and get out of here immediately."

It's not like I'm a patrol soldier. If the guy going bald runs away here, then I'll forgive him.

""Don't fuck with meee!!""

The two men take out knives from their breast pocket. Compared to a sword, the size of those things are like toys, but since they've taken out blades, I should treat them seriously as opponents.

"Hey... isn't this guy a noble?"

The guy who still hasn't taken his foot off the younger sister speaks while getting somewhat uneasy.

"That's right. If you get out of here right away, I'll forgive you."

I don't mind if I have to beat them up either. But I just wanted to try wielding around my authority.

"Heh! This guy's unarmed. Nobody'll find out if we killed and dumped him somewhere! Get hiimm!!"

Two of them charge at me. It's true that if they kill and abandon me in a ditch, nobody might be able to find out. But based on those moves, that's out of the question.

I don't need to hold back against those who wield blades. I bash the face of the man who comes at me first with all my strength. My fist goes straight into his nose, I hear a dull sound and he flies all the way to the wall.

Then, I grasp the hand of the distracted man that was gripping the knife and prevent him from moving.

"He-hey... hurry up and stand up!"

That's probably impossible for them.

"Hey!... Hiih! He's dead."

Not only did I cave his nose in, I felt some of his bones breaking. He won't survive.

"It hurtsss, stopp itttt!!"

I tighten my grip on his hand. Due to the pain, he drops his knife to the ground, but I don't let up.

"Stoooooop!! Aaaaaah!!!"

I can hear a creaking sound coming from his hand and lastly, after a large snap, the man reaches his limit. I release his hand and the fallen man could no longer get back up.

The tremendous groan resonates throughout the nightscape of the city.

"With such a loud voice, people will gather immediately. Hurry up and get out of here."

However, the man who has his foot on the younger sister doesn't remove it. Even if I let him pass this time, he will continue to cause women to suffer, which will obviously tick me off, so I send him flying with a front kick.

"Blood is-! My leg-! It won't move!"

Oh, so you got so scared of seeing your friend getting beat up that you can't even move? I did something bad then.

His stomach must have burst, since he's writhing in pain while vomiting blood. I apologize to him in my mind and pick up the younger sister. Fortunately, other than her bruised face, she only suffered light scratches and her life isn't in danger.

"Rather than me³-! My sister!"

Fumu, she is quite the good kid that cares for her sister. I feel a little healing from this after I was shown something so dirty.

"Are you okay as well?"

The elder sister stares at me dumbfoundedly but after regaining her senses from hearing her younger sister's voice, she desperately tries to gather her torn pajamas and hide her body. From what I can see, she has no external injuries, but unfortunately she was still raped. There are no injuries, but this might be more serious.

The elder sister puts her underwear on and eventually the patrol soldiers came running over from hearing the screams.

"What's the ruckus?! State your name!"

"I'm Hardlett, Viscount of the Kingdom."

After confirming my attire and my face, the patrol soldiers get flustered and bows.

"Pardon me! Lord Hardlett, what is the situation here?"

"Those ruffians were getting rough with women. When I stepped in, they attacked me, so now they're lying over there. The two of them should still be breathing."

The guy with the broken wrist and the guy who's going bald should not be dead yet. The one who's coughing blood and writhing around is sluggish. It might be the end for him.

"It's just as the noble said, we were saved by him..."

The younger sister is desperately appealing to the soldiers but they don't pay her much attention.

"Tie up the ones who are on the ground!"

"So, can these girls and I leave now?"

"Yessir! Looking at the situation here, it's clear that these guys have committed a crime! Shall I send you home?"

"No need. But for knives to be pulled here, the capital is quite the dangerous place at night, don't you think?"

"I am ashamed at that fact..."

The patrol soldiers must have thought I was blaming them, but they hit the lowered head of the ringleader of the men.

"You did something unnecessary! Now walk, you baldy!!"

You reap what you sow. It's unavoidable. I tell them I would send the girls back home and let the patrol soldiers handle the rest.

"Are you alright? If some of his semen got into you, we could go to an inn with a bath."

When I look at the elder sister who has calmed down, I can see that her breasts are quite big and that she has a gentle beauty about her. It's not a surprise that other men would try to make her their belonging by force.

On the other hand, the younger sister has a flat chest, her body is also thin and doesn't arouse me. Her shortly cut hair isn't treated well. No wonder she wasn't raped.

“You saved me before he was able to let anything out so... um, our house is right around the corner so...”

She just got raped so she doesn't want to be near men right now. I should just obediently leave her alone.

“U-uhm!”

The younger sister gets in front of me and lowers her head.

“Hardlett-sama! You were so cool! Thanks for saving me and my sister!”

“Sure, from now on, don't walk around so late at night.”

The siblings bow their heads deeply. The younger sister is especially staring at me passionately. I'll get her to thank me a little.

“Eh!?”

I tilt the chin of the younger sister and give her a soft kiss, just brushing against her lips.

“Eh? Eeeh!? Why!?”

The younger sister seems confused and the elder sister is holding her hand to her mouth in astonishment as well.

“Did you dislike it?”

“I... don't hate it... but why? I... I am...”

If you didn't dislike it, then it's fine. I pet the younger sister's head and left. It has been a while since I've done a good deed, so it made me happy.

After that, I return home and brag to Nonna about the good deed that I did, but since I drank alcohol, I even told her about the interaction I had with the prostitute, so I end up receiving a flurry of her headbutts. That didn't go so well.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Spring.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry At most 6000

Assets: 9980 gold (6800) (Materials -200 gold) (Labor Cost -400) (Campaign -400) (Nonna -20)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Rita (imitation maid), Catherine (lewd), Melissa, Maria, Sebastian (butler), Ruby, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Territory: Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Yoguri (house guest)

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 51, children who have been born: 9

CHAPTER 87.5

CHARACTER INTRODUCTION & COUNTRY NAMES

PROTAGONIST

Aegir Hardlett

21 years old. Black hair. Goldonia Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Feudal Lord of Former Arkland Southeastern Area. King of the Mountains

The protagonist is blessed with a muscular build and kinetic vision, as well as talent for fighting. He is unskilled in strategic planning and usage of tactics. His final goal is to become king; he loves women, is great in bed, and has a wide range of tastes for women. His cock is still growing even till this day.¹

FAMILY (FEMALES)

Celia

17 years old. Silver hair. Height: 158cm B80 W57 H79

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama, Self: I (watashi)

As the protagonist's adjutant, Celia keeps her public and private life separate and is the closest to him. She offers her virginity to the protagonist to satisfy her heart's desire, and also fulfills her role as a lover. She knows how to read, write and do math, and shows talent in a wide variety of fields. Her loyalty is strong, bordering on fanaticism, but she also lets her guard down around a few household members besides the protagonist.

Nonna

20 years old. Brown hair. Height: 160 B113 W61 H84

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama, Self: I (watakushi)

Nonna is the protagonist's legal wife and daughter of the destroyed Elektra family, entrusting her heirloom sword to the protagonist and swearing to reclaim Elektra. She is familiar with manners and etiquette, and knowledgeable of noble's common sense

but is a stranger to commoners' common sense and spending habits. When there is sufficient room to spare financially, her wasteful spending habits gets put on display. She normally wears a refined and elegant mask but when in lust, she has a preference towards masochism. Outsiders get overwhelmed whenever they see her huge breasts. She has beauty that greatly surpasses even those in the family.

Carla

Mid 20's Chestnut-colored hair. Height:165 B92 W62 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir, Self: I (atashi)

Carla is the protagonist's concubine and gave birth to his daughter, Ekaterina. She is targeting Nonna's standing. Things like exposure and excreting outdoors spurs her perverted hobbies.

Mel

38 years old. Blonde hair. Height:160 B88 W65 H92

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

Mel is the protagonist's concubine and gave birth to his daughters, Sue and Miu. She was a noble's lover but was abandoned after getting pregnant. She was severely burned in a wildfire, but the protagonist saved her and slept with her. She was separated once before, but became the protagonist's concubine after reuniting with him. She is surrounded by four daughters already, but hopes to give birth to more children. She approves of the protagonist's relationship with Kuu and Ruu.

Kuu

19 years old. Blonde hair. Height:158 B80 W57 H84

Kuu is Mel's daughter. She supports the relationship between her mother and the protagonist. Had her first kiss stolen by the protagonist. Along with Ruu, her relationship with the protagonist has become one where they caress each other.

Ruu

15 years old. Blonde hair. Height:148 B74 W55 H74

Ruu is Mel's daughter. She sells things around the town. She's timid and hesitant, slow-witted and clumsy. On one hand, she adores the protagonist as a father, but has burning lust for him when they make love to each other.

Irijina Wolls

23 years old. Brown hair. Height:181 B93 W68 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-dono, Self: I (watashi)

Irijina was a former soldier of Arkland but was captured by the protagonist and fucked, becoming his lover. She's a master with the spear and proud of her manly herculean strength. She has a lively personality, is naive, and especially alien toward relations between man and woman. Because she has such an impressive stature, she often gets attacked intensely by the protagonist.

Rita

29 years old. Black hair. Height:170 B88 W61 H92

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama, Self: I (watashi)

The feudal lord in Datrohn fell in love with Rita at first sight and took her in as a servant, but treated her as a toy. After that, she was brought to bed by the protagonist and was charmed by him. She is highly skilled in housework and highly capable at managing people. She desires to be dominated and loves large cocks. She is deeply infatuated with the protagonist, whose cock is growing year-by-year.

Catherine

24 years old. Blonde hair. Height:156 B80 W57 H82

Way of addressing protagonist: Dear (anata)

Catherine is a blonde beauty and is the daughter of the rebelling noble, but for the sake of saving her child, misunderstood the protagonist and surrendered her body to him. She has given birth to Rose, and the protagonist's biological son, Antonio. Because of that, her relationship with Nonna is slightly awkward. She is extremely lustful and lewd, and loses her sense of reason when she craves men. Her body and heart has fallen and she has forgotten about her ex-husband, swearing to offer everything to the protagonist.

Yoguri

22 years old. Black hair. Height:163 B98 W60 H82

Yoguri is the central figure in the first farmers' revolt in the Arkland war. The protagonist promised her that he would treat her village favorably but chased after him when he forgot. After that, her wish was fulfilled and she offered her virginity as

well. Currently, she stays by the protagonist's side as a house guest, and struggles to protect her villagers. She has considerably large tits.

Pipi

13 years old. Dark brown hair. Height:138 B68 W53 H63

Way of addressing protagonist: Chief (zokuchou-sama), Self: Pipi

Pipi is the daughter of the previous mountain nation chief, who was defeated by the protagonist. She is an important person who communicates with the mountain nation. She desires to bear the protagonist's child, but since there is such a disparity between their body sizes, she gets treated as a mascot. She is extremely skilled with the bow, even amongst those in the mountain nation.

Luna

21 years old. Light brown hair. Height:162 B77 W58 H75

Way of addressing protagonist: Chief (zokuchou-sama), Self: I (watashi)

Luna was offered to the protagonist by the mountain nation tribes as proof of their pledge of allegiance, and her virginity was also taken. She excels in martial arts, including swordplay, and is also a capable leader. Because she learned how to speak politely from reading old books, she uses a somewhat strange way of speaking.

Ruby

17 years old. Brown hair. Height:150 B76 W55 H74

Way of addressing protagonist: Chief (zokuchou-sama), Self: I (atashi)

Ruby is Luna's younger sister and also a follower who accompanies her elder sister. She is excellent at martial arts and was even able to wound the protagonist in a past battle. At this point, she is still worried about that fact.

Sue

2 years old. Mel's daughter. Protagonist's biological child

Miu

1 year old. Mel's daughter. Protagonist's biological child

Antonio

2 years old. Catherine's son. Protagonist's biological child

Ekaterina

1 year old. Carla's daughter. Protagonist's biological child

FAMILY AT THE CAPITAL

Melissa

27 years old. Red hair. Height:164 B90 W59 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

Melissa is a prostitute from White City. Due to a tragic experience in her past, her genitals were damaged but has good compatibility with the protagonist. Because Melissa is unable to bear children, she has really gotten fond of the children servants. She likes to wear racy clothes. She stays in the capital with the children servants as the person in charge of the mansion. She used her techniques as a prostitute to cause Maria to succumb to her, but is now troubled at what to do.

Maria

24 years old. Chestnut-colored hair. Height:164 B74 W58 H80

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

Maria is a girl from Roleil's Little Bird Pavilion inn who fell in love with the protagonist after he embraced her and went with the flow. Maria is good at cooking and works hard to support her livelihood. She's gentle, kind and liked by the children, but is a scaredy cat who can't deal with fighting. Her breasts are small, but is no longer worried about it. She is fostering the love she has with Melissa and uses the dildo on a nightly basis to make love with Melissa.

Miti

16 years old. Black hair. Height:153 B78 W56 H79

Way of addressing protagonist: Master (danna-sama), Aegir-sama

Miti left the orphanage to live and work at the mansion. She's good at dealing with things, and is the older sister out of the three kids from the orphanage; also admires Maria. Her work includes cooking, laundry, and other various chores. After she was shown some incredible sex, she is sexually frustrated. She has a habit of peeping and has recently been peeking at the sexual activities between Melissa and Maria.

Alma

13 years old. Black hair

Way of addressing protagonist: she doesn't

Being the youngest of the orphanage trio, Alma is a scaredy cat and always hides behind Miti. She's skilled with her hands, so her work includes knitting and sewing. The only people she can talk to are Miti and Kroll. Especially when Celia gets close, she gets scared to death and can't move. She is curious about Kroll, the only man that is close to her.

Nina

14 years old. Brown hair

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama

Nina is the caregiver who Leopolt brought with him. Her work consists of caring entirely for him and she has a little bit of a crush on him. She is starting to develop into a woman but her master is indifferent to that fact.

WOMEN (SEPARATED)

Mireille

Mid 20's. Red hair. Height:172 B84 W62 H90

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir, Self: I (atai)

Mireille met the protagonist while she was with Carla and worked together for a while. She has a determined personality, is boyish and has superior sword-handling skills. At the moment, she is in the eastern region of Treia where she struggles in doing farm work and hunting.

Claire

24 years old. Black hair. Height:163 B80 W57 H82

Claire is the daughter of a former noble. She wanted to regain her family name but ended up descending to the path of a bandit, getting defeated by the protagonist and even had her ass raped. She entered the Flitch company in the kingdom of Stura and has risen in ranks to become the person in charge of the northeastern area of the

Central Plains. She wants to succeed however she can, regardless of appearance and doesn't mind using her body in negotiations either. She feels that the transactions she has made with the protagonist has lots of promise.

Laurie

15 years old. Blonde hair. Height:145 B72 W51 H68

Laurie is the daughter of a ruined merchant family and was taken into Claire's custody. She is extremely smart and is blessed with great business sense. She has a child-like figure but is used to handling men. She is attempting to climb up in ranks alongside Claire.

Claudia Albens Malordol

35 years old. Blonde hair. Height:160 B89 W71 H95

Claudia is the wife of a marquess. Due to a discord with her husband, she was left in White City. Claudia invited the protagonist, who stole her daughter's virginity, to sleep with her but became captivated by him. When time came to part ways, she even offered her daughter as a means to stop him from leaving. She asked the protagonist once before handing him a variety of gifts. Her flames of passion have been relit and looks forward to enjoying the letters from the protagonist once every month. She's starting to get fat because she may be eating too much gourmet food.

Clara

15 years old. Silver hair. Height:148 B74 W50 H70

Clara is Claudia's assistant, who was bought in the slave market. She has an expressionless face and cold eyes, but has relaxed around the protagonist and accepted him as her first man. She has a brilliant mind and is able to observe things calmly. She is the source of information regarding the circumstances in the Federation that is written in the letters sent to the protagonist once every month.

Christina Albens Malordol

21 years old. Chestnut-colored hair. Height:159 B83 W57 H83

Christina is the child of a concubine and was thrown to White City because of her problematic behaviour. Her relationship with her mother is lacking and after one immoral misconduct, offered her virginity to the protagonist. She is steadily looking for marriage candidates for her mother.

Lucy Yuktovania

500 years old?? Blonde hair. Height:166 B100 W58 H96

Way of addressing protagonist: You (anata), Boy

Lucy is a self-proclaimed vampire who has lived more than 500 years, has inhuman strength and demonic eyes which can send those whom it sees to their death. She protects the house deep in the forest and is the one responsible for the lost kingdom(?) She is a peerless beauty, has goddess-like style, and has extraordinarily terrifying technique in sex.

She taught the protagonist, as well as gave him his reason to live (the protagonist took her as her lover but also treats her as a mother). She promised to become the protagonist's woman if he becomes king and rules over the area in the vicinity around Erg forest, and this promise is the origin of all of the protagonist's actions. Her existence is absolute and takes priority over everything else.

COMPANIONS (MEN, SUBORDINATES)

Leopolt Fugenberg

22 years old. Staff Officer.

Way of addressing protagonist: Lord Hardlett

Leopolt appealed directly to the protagonist and became his subordinate. He has excellent leadership ability and has talent in commanding and also has knowledge about politics and conspiracies. He shares ambition with the protagonist.

Adolph Fulker

29 years old. Domestic Affairs official (interim)

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama

Adolph is a former parliamentary official of Arkland and was thrown in prison for criticizing the upper echelon, but was rescued by the protagonist. Adolph is knowledgeable in government affairs and also has innovative ideas. He is shameless and aloof from the world but is unable to fight. He pretty much singlehandedly carries the burden of the internal affairs of the territory.

Sebastian Mizels

56 years old. Butler

Way of addressing protagonist: Master (danna-sama)

Sebastian served as a butler for a noble family but lost his job when Goldonia was undergoing reform. He was hired by the protagonist. He is courteous, polite, and highly capable in business and administration. He is a calm elderly gentleman.

Kroll

14 years old. Child. Blonde hair

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama

As the only boy in the orphanage trio, Kroll was taken from the orphanage to do chores which requires a man's power such as chopping wood, starting fire, etc. The women he can't disobey are increasing, including Melissa, Carla and Irijina. He is troubled daily as the only man in the mansion at the capital and worries so much that he doesn't fail to masturbate five times a day

Christoph

25 years old. Macho

Christoph is a soldier in the private army.

Mack

31 years old. Height:2m. Super macho. Muscular daruma. Muscle demon. Captain of Engineering Corps.

Way of addressing protagonist: no subject

Mack is a former slave but was released by the protagonist and company. Mack is the only person who comes close to comparing to the protagonist in terms of strength. His entire body is muscular and is bulky like a gorilla, almost like a monstrous beast. He isn't good at dealing with Nonna, who was brought together with him by the same slave merchant. He doesn't have much experience with women. He is newly appointed as the captain of the engineering corps within the private army.

CHARACTERS (COUNTRY, ARMY)

Alexandro Goldonia (Alexandro I)

30 years old. Goldonian king.

After his father's death, Alexandro murdered his brother and uncle and ascended to the throne. In order to strengthen his royal authority, he uses a variety of schemes. He aims for Goldonia to be the strongest nation, and rejects the principle of peace his father advocated. He is the founder of the central army and is excellent in planning, who can also perform cold-hearted tactics. He relies heavily on the protagonist and others with superb abilities as the core for his central army. He is surrounded in conspiracies and is cornering the kingdom of Treia.

Marquess Gudroit Hoover

52 years old. Royal Army Supreme Commander.

Gudroit is the supreme commander who oversees the entire army, but the central army is managed and commanded by the king himself, so he has no power to influence it. Due to the rise of the central army, he has lost his actual authority, and his popularity is in decline. He is waiting for a chance to bounce back and is trying his best to use his stubborn head to think.

Count Erich Radhalde

32 years old. Commander of the Central Army. Feudal lord of Former Arkland Northeastern Territory.

Erich has been serving as the army commander since the days of the Wings of Dawn. He is highly capable in tactics, politics, and leadership. He has a good personal relationship with the protagonist. He is one of the king's favourites, and is one of the top new nobles. Meanwhile, he feels overwhelmed with his duties in the center and he isn't able to check his territory, thus leaving the management to his acting official.

Baron Bruno Renster

27 years old. Affiliated with the Central army.

Bruno is a veteran soldier since the Wings of Dawn days. He has climbed to his current standing from a rank-and-file soldier. He has a steady leadership and has established

himself to be quite tenacious but is lacking in explosive offensive power. He has a rather good relationship with the protagonist. He is a new noble.

Count Kenneth Baldwin

41 years old. Goldonia's Foreign Minister.

Kenneth was appointed by the king in the newly established position as minister. He is skilled in conspiracies and scheming. He drafts the schemes along with the king.

Agor

30's. Company Commander affiliated with the Goldonian Central Army.

Agor fled from the Federation and is a former subordinate of the protagonist. He has above-average abilities as a company commander, and is an individually strong soldier. He is a closet pervert who goes back and forth to visit the widow, and is hiding the maid that took care of him in Datrohn and who he brought with him. He is separated by affiliation but still continues to be good friends with the protagonist. He was caught two-timing and was stabbed by the widow.

CHARACTERS (OTHERS)

Andrei

43 years old. Bearded. Large man.

Andrei fled from the Federation, and is now the owner of the Hard-boiled Pavilion inn, and is quite the dandy and austere man. He is a severe lolicon and has impregnated the girl who yearns for him and is also 30 years younger, destroying his popularity. Since then, his family and employees treat him coldly. He has a son with Natalie. Recently, he has been sexually frustrated and is commuting to the orphanage to fondle Aurelia.

Natalie

20 years old. Has a childlike stature.

Natalie is Andrei's wife, who appears to be a child around 10 years old. She plans to neuter Andrei, who has gotten another girl pregnant.

Dorothea

42 years old. Director of the orphanage. Thin.

Dorothea is a middle-aged woman in charge of managing the orphanage. She tries her best from the very beginning to do everything she can for the sake of all the children. She is a quick thinker. Since she has eaten well these days, she has gotten plumper and has returned to being quite an attractive mature lady. Recently there have been many things that cause her to feel down.

Aurelia

20 years old. Helper at the orphanage. Tiny

As a girl who was raised in the orphanage, Aurelia helps Dorothea around the place. She's a lively but child-like girl. She misunderstands Andrei's passionate looks at her as a father's love and yearns for him but she gave in when he pressed his body against hers. She singlehandedly accepts the semen from Andrei, who still has continued discord with his wife, but she herself is happy.

ENEMY NATIONS

Kingdom of Treia. The King
Trisnea III

He is a safe king and doesn't make many mistakes while ruling, but he lacks decisiveness and often gets pushed around by the opinions of Marquess Dunois and the other influential nobles.

Kingdom of Treia. The Prime Minister.
Marquess Dunois

He has a sharp mind, and leadership ability and has risen in ranks from the field of domestic affairs so he doesn't have an abundance of knowledge regarding military issues. He plans to use a conservative policy where he will build a fortress to oppose Goldonia, retreat into a defensive position and wait for the intervention of the surrounding countries.

Nations

Olga Federation

Population: 20 million

Ruler: Jutland II

Capital City: Jutlandgrad: Population 600,000 – 800,000 (2nd class citizens details unknown)

System: Feudal

Military Strength: Current – 200,000 / Max Mobilization – 3 million

Area of Dominion: All Area North of the Great Mountain Range

With a 500 year history, this continent is the oldest and largest nation. A feudal system is used to rule over the vastness of its dominion. Since the north and central regions will get intensely cold in the winter season, the main cities, including the capital, will congregate in the southwest region. A strong and conservative class system is maintained and a stable society is formed. The nation is wary about movement from its largest threat, the Garland Empire. On the other hand, it thinks of the conflicts occurring in the Central Plains as nothing more than fireworks, and doesn't have much particular interest in them. However, a portion of the influential nobles advocate support for Goldonia.

Garland Empire

Population: 40 million

Ruler: Garland The Great

Capital City: Garland: Population 1 million

System: Absolute Monarchy

Military Strength: Current – 1.3 million / Max Mobilization – 3.5 million

Area of Dominion: All Area South of the Great Mountain Range

The Empire is a developing nation and has been annexing the countries to the south one after the other in recent years to expand their territory. Although the nobility system remains, the authority of the emperor is strong so it is virtually a dictatorship. Since it is warm throughout the land, there is an abundance of farmable land and population is large. Due to its rapid growth in recent years, various conflicts persists throughout the land and factors of unease also remain. Using the western plains several times as the stage for a large 1 million person battle with the Olga Federation, it still has not been settled yet. In order to establish dominance over the Federation, they have begun massively expanding their armaments.

Kingdom of Goldonia

Population: 1.6 million

Ruler: Alexandro I

Capital City: Goldonia: Population 60,000

System: Feudal

Military Strength: Current – 80,000 / Max Mobilization – 160,000

Area of Dominion: Entire Northern Area of the Central Plains

Goldonia is the largest nation within the Central Plains. They are situated at the northern edge of the Central Plains, where they trade with the Olga Federation via the North Teries River and the land route, and interact with each other. As a result of the fight for the successor, a new king was crowned and the reinforcement of the army and the strengthening of authority continues. The power is shifting from the traditional nobles to the new nobles, in which the new King has appointed. The nation was the leading power in the Arkland war, in which they won, then dismantled the country, and annexed the north and east regions. Currently, Goldonia is continuing to reinforce their army at a rapid pace.

Kingdom of Treia

Population: 390,000

Ruler: Trisnea III

Capital City: Trisnea: Population 20,000

System: Feudal

Military Strength: Current – 40,000 / Max Mobilization – 60,000

Area of Dominion: Center Area of the Central Plains

Treia is a typical small nation in the central plains but is gradually growing larger. Inside the nation is the famous Erg forest, also known as the forest of death. As a result of the Arkland war, they annexed the south half and the capital of that country. However, the southern area has suffered an enormous amount of damage and there is also the animosity that the fellow citizens hold against each other for many years, so Treia is unable to reap the fruits of their occupied territory yet. An armed conflict occurred in the eastern region with Goldonia and tremendous damage was suffered. After that, assuming Goldonia will be a future enemy nation, a line of fortresses will be built along the border to oppose them and citizens will start to be conscripted.

Republic of Stura

Population: 220,000

Ruler: —

Capital City: Mishil: Population 50,000

System: Republicanism

Military Strength: Current – 3000 / Max Mobilization – ?

Area of Dominion: Center Area of the Central Plains

Stura is a commercial nation along the North Teries river. The capital city along the river functions as a logistics base and it is an economically rich country. They don't have a standing army, but when necessary, mercenaries can be gathered and an army can be formed. On the other hand, they have a low capacity to produce their own food so they end up relying on imports. Merchants are powerful and the opinions of influential merchants become the basis for the actions of the nation. The republic exists within a conflict between the influential merchants and corruption is quite rampant. As a result of participating in the Arkland war, they gained the territory opposite to the shore.

Magrado Dukedom

Population: 620,000

Ruler: —

Capital City: Odoros: Population 20,000

System: Feudal

Military Strength: Current – 20,000 / Max Mobilization – 80,000

Area of Dominion: Northern Area of the Central Plains

Magrado is adjacent to the Republic of Stura and faces the river as well, but the political regime is strong so their trade hasn't developed yet. On the other hand, they have a large mine so their mining and manufacturing industry is comparatively prosperous, but compared to the products from the highly efficient Olga Federation, you can't escape from thinking they are cheap and nasty. Their production of food is barely enough to get their own citizens full. As a result of participating in the Arkland war, they gained the territory opposite to the shore. The nation feels a sense of crisis from the rapid expansion of armaments.

Yurest Alliance

Population: 520,000

Ruler: None, Council.

Capital City: Barrela?: Population 10,000

System: Union of Nobles

Military Strength: Current – 30,000 / Max Mobilization – 60,000

Area of Dominion: Northern Area of the Central Plains

The gathered council of powerful families originally ruled over the forest and the remote areas. The small cities become the base for each noble, and there isn't a capital city, but the largest city Barrela was chosen as the diplomatic base. Their relationship with the adjacent Goldonia is strong, and there are many friendly personal relationships with the Goldonian nobles displayed in the many marriages. They are confused with the confrontation between Treia and Goldonia and are unable to decide which side to stand on.



PDF BY: TRAITORAIZEN